

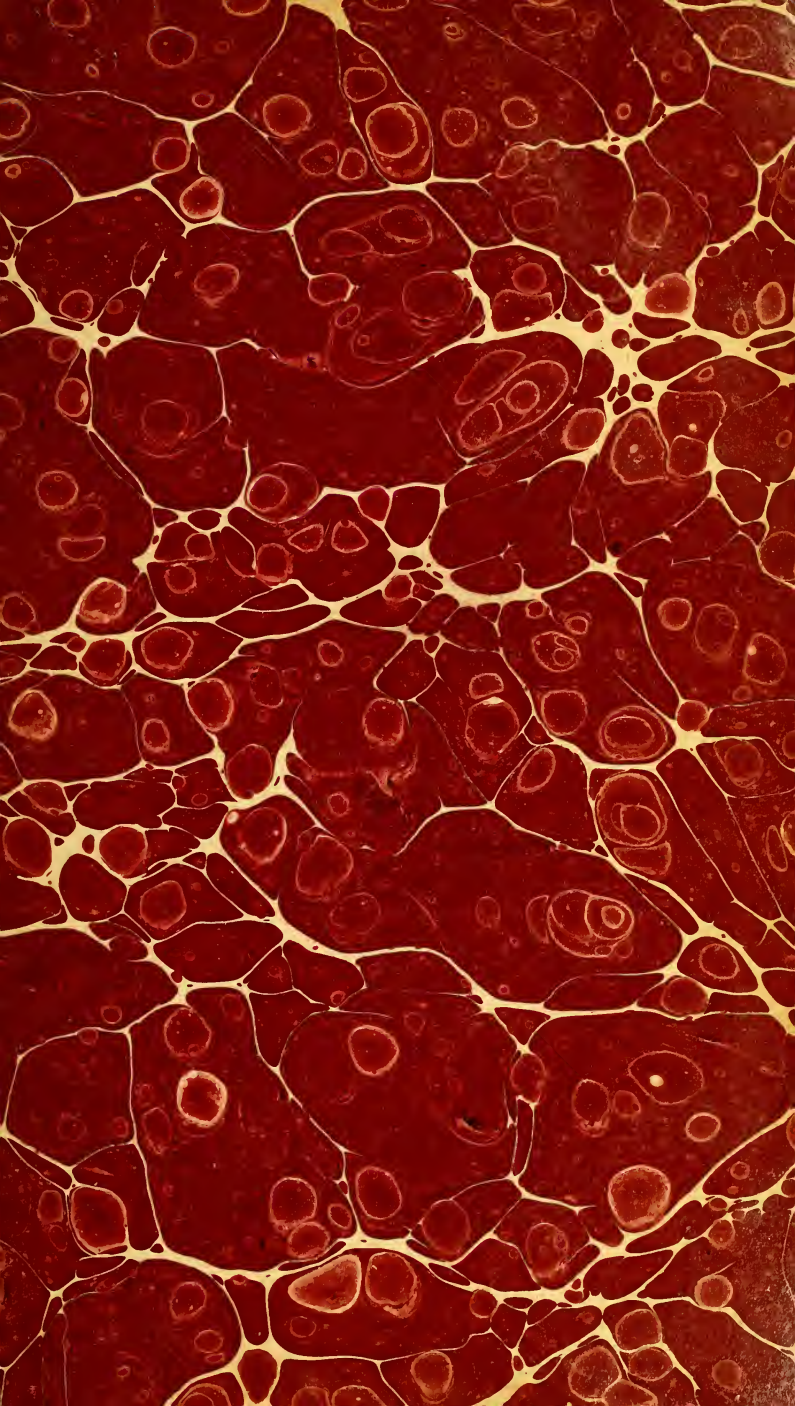




Class F 74

Book W9 W85

PRESENTED BY



PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Worcester Society of Antiquity,

FOR THE YEAR 1907.

VOLUME XXIII.



Worcester, Mass.

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.

1908.

U. S. A. CXXXII.

CONTENTS.

Officers for 1907	3
Committees for 1907	4
Proceedings of Four Hundred and Twenty-second Meeting	7
A United Military Hospital in Worcester	10
Proceedings of Four Hundred and Twenty-third Meeting .	26
Origin and Early History of the Building Now Known as Davis Hall	27
A Chapter in the History of the Worcester Academy . . .	45
Proceedings of Four Hundred and Twenty-Fourth Meeting	58
The French Canadians in the Development of Our Country	59
Proceedings of Four Hundred and Twenty-fifth Meeting .	76
What Our New England Forefathers Had to Read . . .	76
Memorial to William Mayo Burgess	104

25
Worcester Historical Society, Worcester, Mass.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

1148
340

Worcester Society of Antiquity,

FOR THE YEAR 1907.

VOLUME XXIII.



Worcester, Mass.

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.

1908.

U. S. A. CXXXII.

F74
W9 W85

Gift
Amer. Anti. Soc.

24

OFFICERS FOR 1907.

President:

MANDER ALVAN MAYNARD.

First Vice-President:

CHARLES ELROY BURBANK.

Second Vice-President:

MISS ADELINE MAY.

Treasurer:

FRANK EMERY WILLIAMSON.

Secretary:

WALTER DAVIDSON.

Librarian:

ELLERY BICKNELL CRANE.

COMMITTEES FOR 1907.

Executive Board:

MANDER A. MAYNARD, ADELINE MAY,
CHARLES E. BURBANK, FRANK E. WILLIAMSON,
 WALTER DAVIDSON.

Standing Committee on Nominations:

GEORGE E. ARNOLD, WILLIAM F. ABBOT,
 EDWARD F. COFFIN.

Archaeology:

NATHANIEL PAINE, EDWARD T. ESTEY,
 PROF. A. F. CHAMBERLAIN.

General History:

HON. A. S. ROE, MRS. R. B. FOWLER,
 WILLIAM F. ABBOT.

Local History and Genealogy:

CHARLES A. CHASE, C. C. BALDWIN,
MISS MARY A. SMITH, MRS. R. B. DODGE,
 G. M. RICE.

Military History:

GEN. R. H. CHAMBERLAIN, WOODBURY C. SMITH,
MAJ. F. G. STILES, GEORGE H. RICE,
MAJ. E. T. RAYMOND.

Ancient Manuscript, Engraving, Etc.:

F. S. BLANCHARD, CHARLES R. JOHNSON,
C. W. GASSETT, DR. AMANDA C. BRAY,
JAMES LOGAN.

Library:

JUDGE WILLIAM T. FORBES, DR. M. BONNER FLINN,
EDITH M. GATES.

Museum and Articles for the Same:

HON. LEDYARD BILL, ALFRED L. AIKEN,
H. H. MERRIAM, GEORGE C. RICE,
MISS LUCY F. SAWYER, E. H. O'BRIEN,
MISS ADELINE MAY, WILLIAM E. RICE.

Publications of the Society:

HON. ELLERY B. CRANE, GEORGE MAYNARD,
HERBERT WESBY.

Membership, Biography and Resolutions:

MAJ. WILLIAM T. HARLOW, MISS ANNA M. MOORE,
CHARLES A. CHASE.

Marking Historical Places:

CHARLES E. BURBANK,	MRS. WILLIAM T. FORBES,
O. B. HADWEN,	MISS MARY L. T. COGSWELL,
J. P. HAMILTON,	J. FRED HUMES,
MRS. C. C. BALDWIN.	

Photographic Work:

CHARLES F. DARLING,	MRS. KATE DARLING,
HENRY M. WHEELER,	MISS M. E. REED,
SAMUEL D. SPURR,	MRS. L. G. WHITE.

Auditors:

CHARLES A. CHASE,	LEWIS C. MUZZY,
MARCUS L. FOSTER.	

PROCEEDINGS.

THE FOUR HUNDRED TWENTY-SECOND
MEETING, TUESDAY EVENING, JANUARY 1, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, 39 Salisbury Street, Worcester, Mass., President Maynard in the chair.

Others present, Messrs. Arnold, Burbank, Bachelier, Coffin, Crane, Davidson, Ely, Dr. Flinn, A. H. Hill, E. H. Hill, S. W. Hobbs, Charles R. Johnson, Geo. Maynard, G. M. Rice, Stiles, D. B. Williams, Williamson, Wheeler, Mrs. Flinn, Mrs. Maynard, E. W. Coffin, F. H. Gage, Miss Gage, Mrs. E. H. Hill, A. S. Pinkerton, Mrs. Pinkerton, Mrs. Stiles, C. N. Walker and Mrs. Walker.

The Librarian reported receipts for the past month as follows: fifteen bound volumes, fifty-six pamphlets and seventy-four miscellaneous papers.

A communication from Hon. Ledyard Bill was read expressing his inability to serve on the Standing Committee on Nominations, a position to which he had been elected at the last or December meeting, and on motion of Mr. Rice, his resignation was accepted.

The Committee appointed at the last meeting to draft and report a testimonial in honor of the retiring President, offered the following: "The Worcester Society of Antiquity desired to place on record their regret that Mr. Lyman A. Ely finds it necessary to decline to serve as President of the Society for a longer time, and hereby express the high appreciation they have of his very valu-

able and acceptable services as President for the past four years.

Signed, NATHANIEL PAINE,
 ALEXANDER BELISLE,
 F. S. BLANCHARD,
 Committee.

By a vote of the Society the above testimonial was accepted and ordered placed on record, also a copy sent to the retiring President.

The Standing Committee on Nominations presented the name of U. Waldo Cutler and he was elected to membership in this Society.

President Maynard then read his inaugural address, closing with his announcement of the several committees to serve for the present year

To the Members of the Worcester Society of Antiquity:

Ladies and Gentlemen:

The remarks I have to make tonight will be brief.

I wish again to thank you for the confidence you have expressed by electing me as your President for the ensuing year, and I pledge you my best service.

The Society starts on the new year under favorable circumstances. We have real estate the value of which is estimated at \$50,000, a library of 20,000 bound volumes, and about 35,000 pamphlets, a museum of more than 6,000 articles, not including our Indian relics, which number some 5,000 pieces.

Under the will of the late Hon. Stephen Salisbury we are to receive a piece of land on the west side of our present location, which will enable us to drive from Tuckerman Street to the rear of our present building without trespassing on land of other parties, or it will enable us to extend our building to Tuckerman Street at some time in the future, if we so desire. The Society's property is in good condition and we are out of debt.

In addition to our real estate we have about \$6,000 invested as a permanent fund, and a bequest from Mr. Salisbury's estate, soon to be received, of \$5,000 more.

We have at present about 300 members. One third of the list are ladies.

Our present income is not sufficient to enable the Society to carry forward the work inaugurated as rapidly as we might wish, and, having lost one of our most generous contributors, perhaps the easiest and most satisfactory way to provide against any possible deficit in our current expense account may be by increasing our membership. If each member would bring in one or two names to add to our membership, it might provide ample means to pay all bills, including the printing of our Society documents.

Our present competent and faithful Secretary is not able to attend to all the details of his office, and I would recommend that the By-Laws of the Society be so amended as to provide for a Financial Secretary, preferably a lady, who shall be charged with the care of the membership of the Society, keep a correct record of the members, receive all new applications, collect all regular dues from members, and pay all moneys received by her to the Treasurer, and for the faithful performance of duty to receive such pay as the executive board may determine.

The Society has not published its Proceedings promptly since 1904, as the funds to cover the expense were not in hand. The Executive Board has just ordered another document printed, and we hope we may be able soon to print all our transactions more promptly. Many valuable papers have been read by our members that ought to be put in print to save them from being lost, and we hope to be entertained and instructed by more of them in the future.

Our annual field day in June has become a most enjoyable occasion, participated in by not only our own mem-

bers, but by many of our friends in the city, some of whom eventually join our ranks, and we are glad to welcome them as members of the Society.

If we can double our membership this year we shall be able to print nearly, if not quite all, of the documents now in waiting.

I have no doubt but that your cordial assistance will be rendered in furthering the work of the Society, and in the duties that shall devolve upon us. Let us try to be prompt and faithful, remembering that:

“The grace of a day that has passed away
Will never return again.”

Dr. Thomas H. Gage was then presented to the audience and read an original paper entitled —

A UNITED STATES MILITARY HOSPITAL IN WORCESTER.

One of the humane provisions made by the War Department in the last year of the Civil War, for the comfort and care of sick and disabled volunteer soldiers, was the establishment of general hospitals in each of the states to which those soldiers belonged, and from which they had enlisted; the purpose being to provide accommodation for the invalid soldiers of each state conveniently near their homes, and within comparatively easy reach of friends and relatives.

Two such hospitals were established in Massachusetts, for the exclusive benefit of invalid soldiers of that State; one, the first, at Camp Dix, a camp of rendezvous, in Readville, Norfolk County, where the “barrack buildings,” having been “cleansed and whitewashed,” were converted into a hospital of a thousand beds, which was immediately filled by a transfer of Massachusetts invalids from the hospitals in the vicinity of Washington; the other, the second, to which the name of Dale Hospital was given, in

honor of Surgeon General William J. Dale, of Governor Andrew's staff, in Worcester, on Union Hill.

It is in the history of the latter that we are now interested.

THE HISTORY.

Early in 1864 (I am unable to give the exact date), the Readville Hospital, having been provided and occupied, Surgeon McDougal, medical inspector of the Department of the East, was detailed by the acting Surgeon General of the United States to visit Massachusetts with a view to the selection of a site for a second hospital, and the result of his visit was the recommendation of Worcester, and Union Hill, and the property then known as the Female College, for the purpose.

On the 17th of June, immediately following this visit, Surgeon McDougal, Surgeon General Dale, and Capt. E. E. Camp, assistant quartermaster of the United States Army, were constituted by the War Department a board or commission to proceed to Worcester and to obtain for the United States Government a lease of the property, with instruction to submit estimates for its conversion into a hospital for a thousand patients.

This resulted in securing a lease for five years, at an annual rental of \$6,000. But what report the commission made upon the subject of estimates or plans for the development of the site, does not appear. I think it quite probable, however, that recommendation with regard to plans was considered unnecessary, inasmuch as instructions promulgated just about that time by Secretary of War Stanton, for the information of officers charged with the construction of hospitals (which were not to be deviated from, except in cases of imperative necessity), furnished complete official directions as to what should be provided, as to how and where it should be placed, and as to its

construction. These instructions definitely fixed the general principle in hospital construction for the army of detached pavilions.

There seems to have been delay, from some cause, in beginning work, for I do not discover any evidence that operations were in progress until the 10th of August. Then they were going on, under contract, by W. R. Penniman and another whose name is not given, but by whom they were directed or supervised does not appear. As, however, under army regulations, the Quartermaster's Department is charged with the duty of providing hospital accommodations, I suppose what was being done must have been under the eye of some representative of that department, and who more likely to have been that representative than Capt. Camp, whose name has already been mentioned in connection with the lease? From this time, at all events, the works seems to have gone briskly forward.

Fourteen pavilions or ward buildings, sometimes called barracks, were erected. They were perfectly plain frame buildings of cheap construction, and of regulation pattern and dimensions, each one hundred and sixty feet in length by twenty-five in width, and fourteen high from the ground to the eaves; each comprising, in conformity with prescribed rules, a room for sixty beds, a ward master's room, a diet kitchen, a nurses' room, and bath and wash rooms, all lighted by gas, and provided with an approved ventilation. They were placed at the rear of the main or college buildings, along the east line of the grounds, parallel to each other, and with equal interspaces. The ends looked east and west, and the west ends, on a straight, continuous line, running north and south, constituted the front. They were connected by a wide covered walk or corridor, which ran along the entire front, including interspaces, and which intersected other corridors leading

to headquarters, dispensary, mess-room, extra diet kitchen, etc.

Other buildings required in a government hospital were also provided, and on an extensive scale: barracks for the guard, knapsack rooms, commissary store-rooms, stables, dead house, steam laundry, printing office, out-buildings, etc., for the construction of almost all of which special instructions were given in the circular of Secretary Stanton.

Headquarters for the staff officers were provided in the college building, in which were also the chapel, the library room, a dispensary, a kitchen, a mess room, and wards for patients. All buildings were heated by steam, and the cooking in the admirably fitted up and convenient kitchen was mainly by steam. Water was introduced from the city supply, and drainage provided by a sewer, half a mile in length, which emptied into the river, but what was its course, or exactly where it emptied, I have been unable to learn. It cost \$3,000.

On the 24th of August, 1864, Surgeon Cyrus N. Chamberlain, who had seen three years' field service in the army of the Potomac, first as surgeon of the 10th Mass. Volunteers, later in charge of a field hospital at Gettysburg, and still later as medical inspector of the 1st Army Corps, was ordered to the charge of the hospital, and on the 7th of September I find him advertising for cooks, clerks, and male and female nurses.

By the last of October the work of preparation had so far advanced that patients could be received, and one was admitted October 20th, 131 October 24, and 150 on the 30th, almost all belonging to Massachusetts regiments, and all apparently transfers from Readville. Still the contractors were busy with unfinished work; and it was stated, probably officially, that the maximum number that could then be cared for was 360.

From this comparatively small beginning, onward for almost four months, I find little recorded that seems of interest, except it be the celebration of Thanksgiving Day, of which the Palladium gives the following account: "The day was pleasantly celebrated at Dale Hospital by a dinner of the genuine New England pattern, the gift of liberal contributors in the city and vicinity, who sent turkeys, pies, etc., in such abundance that a second celebration of the festival was had on the following day. The two dinners were enjoyed by the men with that harmony and good feeling which attest their moral worth, as their wounds and disabilities attest their patriotic bravery. The dining halls rang with their cheers for the contributors.

INAUGURATION.

On the 22nd of February, 1865, Washington's birthday, all work of construction, alteration and equipment having been at last completed, there occurred an event of so much more than ordinary interest in the hospital history as to justify extended mention. This was the formal inauguration, which took place on that day in the presence of His Excellency Governor John A. Andrew; Surgeon McDougal of the U. S. army; the Surgeon General of Massachusetts, Dr. Dale, in whose honor the hospital was named; Ex-Governors Lincoln and Washburn; the mayors of Boston and Worcester; the Hon. Alexander H. Bullock, speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, and many other eminent gentlemen of the city and Commonwealth.

The day was propitious and the attendance large. An hour was spent in general inspection, which seems to have resulted in universal commendation of all departments, and of all provisions. The hospital was unanimously pronounced a model of its kind, and an honor, not only to the humanity and enterprise of the War Department,

but to the officers in control, particularly to the Surgeon in charge, Dr. Chamberlain.

Immediately following came the pleasing ceremony of a flag raising. The visitors having gathered around a fine new flag-staff in front of headquarters, with such soldiers as were able drawn up in military order, Speaker Bullock, in behalf of a committee of young ladies having the matter in charge, presented the hospital with a beautiful silk flag, the gift of ladies and gentlemen of the city, and, prefacing it with some gracious and eloquent words of his own, read the following letter:

Worcester, February 22nd, 1864.

To the Hon. A. H. Bullock, Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives:

It affords us great pleasure in this time of our country's peril, engaged as it is in a civil war, unparalleled in any previous age of the world's history for cruelty, revenge, and hate on the part of her enemies, to manifest in some becoming manner our heartfelt appreciation of the glorious cause for which so many of our brave, heroic fathers, husbands and brothers have yielded up their precious lives upon the altar of liberty. We now place in your hands this beautiful flag, generously given by people of Worcester, rendered doubly dear to the nation's heart having had a fresh baptism in the blood of patriots, to be transferred by you to the Dale U. S. A. General Hospital.

Long may our flag float over land and sea, a terror to tyrants and oppressors, and an emblem to the world of American freemen. Let it be enshrined more deeply than before in the inmost soul of every American citizen, and it shall declare to all coming generations, by the bloody victories of Chancellorsville, of Gettysburg, and other glorious achievements, both by sea and land, that liberty

or death is the true principle of the American people, and that—

Conquer we must,
For our cause it is just;
And this be our motto,
In God is our trust;
And the star-spangled banner in triumph shall wave,
O'er the land of the free, and the home of the brave.

Signed, MISS AMELIA F. GRAY,
 MISS EMMA J. SHEPARD,
 MISS EMMA L. DAYTON.

After the reading of this letter Mr. Bullock, speaking briefly and with eloquent allusion to the significance of the day, and to the meaning of the symbol of freedom, unfurled the flag, which was greeted with cheers. Then Dr. Chamberlain, for the hospital and the soldiers and their friends, in a few appropriate and gracious words, accepted the gift and called upon Gov. Andrew, who, in a five minutes' speech, stirred the audience to great enthusiasm by his allusions to the then recent triumph of the Union Army in South Carolina.

The principal address of the occasion, which immediately succeeded these outdoor exercises, was given before a crowded audience in the chapel by Assistant Surgeon Warren Webster, U. S. A., Surgeon in charge of the large military hospital at David's Island, New York Harbor. It was a masterly review of the growth and development of the medical department of the United States army during the four years of civil war, with incidental but interesting allusion to the medical services rendered the United States troops in the war with Mexico, to which were added an exhaustive account and discussion of the medical systems and experiences of Great Britain and France in the Crimean campaigns of 1854-1855.

This address attracted attention very much beyond the limit of the necessarily small audience before which it

was delivered. A committee of distinguished physicians and surgeons of Boston who did not hear it requested and obtained leave to publish it, and I have had access to a printed copy from our Public Library. I know I shall be pardoned for quoting a few of its closing paragraphs:

“This Commonwealth of Massachusetts may well be proud of this General Hospital which we are assembled to inaugurate, and which the judgment of the Surgeon General of the United States and the bounty of the national government have placed in easy access to homes and friends of soldiers who may be so unfortunate as to require medical treatment away from the theatre of active operations at the front. It is an appropriate companion of the many civil institutions for the cure of disease which the liberality of the State has erected within her borders. The active interest taken in its foundation and equipment by the Surgeon General of Massachusetts, who from the first has taken such enlightened views of army sanitary affairs, gives assurance that nothing will be omitted to make the institution everything which could be desired.

“The old Bay State has, in all this prolonged contest with armed men, aided with great power and happiest results to sustain the medical service of the army, and in the official publication of the last annual address of His Excellency the Governor, it is gratifying to note how cordially he expresses his ‘confidence in the efficiency of the medical corps of the army, under the energetic and humane administration of Surgeon General Barnes, the present distinguished head of the bureau at Washington.’

“All the world has seen during this war that wherever a Massachusetts column passes a great people follow it, not only to stimulate the living to fight, endure and conquer, but to place beneath the suffering the great arm of support and consolation, and softly whisper in the ear of

the dying the brightness of eternal anticipations for the brave and good who die for their country.”

The exercises of this very successful day were brought to a close by a collation at the Bay State House, attended by all the distinguished guests who contributed to the entertainment of a large assembly by happy after-dinner addresses.

It is proper to mention here an official statement, made at the time of the inauguration, that since the organization of the hospital 580 patients had been admitted, that 134 had been returned to duty, 43 discharged on the surgeon's certificate of disability, and that there were remaining, and then present, 403; also that there were then represented in the wards 46 Massachusetts regiments, the men being from the armies of the Potomac, from the forces of the gulf, from the armies of General Sherman and General Sheridan, from the Department of the South, from the defences of Washington, and from the prison pens of the Confederacy.

THE ROSTER.

The complete roster at this time was as follows:
Surgeon in charge, Cyrus N. Chamberlain, U.S.A.
Chaplain, Thomas W. Clark, U.S.A.
Executive Officer, B. A. Segur, U.S.A.
Acting Assistant Surgeons, John H. Cutler, U.S.A.; J. Anson Bates, U.S.A.; E. B. Lyon, U.S.A.; William Slavely, U.S.A.
Medical Cadets, Myron L. Chamberlain, U.S.A.; W. O. Taylor, U.S.A.
Hospital and Executive Steward, N. B. Hoyt, U.S.A.
Dispensary Steward, Frank J. Scott, U.S.A.
Property Steward, Charles F. Hazelton, U.S.A.
Acting Commissary Steward, A. J. Trussell.
Clerks, Amos H. Vliet, chief; J. S. Lewis, L. Wagely, Fred A. Ellis, A. C. Wilson, Reuben Heywood.

Postmaster, Pliny Holbrook.

Commissary Clerk, R. R. King.

Librarian, John H. Fox.

Chief Wardmaster, W. W. Mason.

Dressers, S. O. Remington, S. W. Bowen, David B. Hill.

THE LIBRARY.

One of the most interesting and attractive features of the hospital was the library. It was the pet and pride of officers and men. On the 5th of November, 1864, only two weeks after the first patient was admitted, the two Unitarian societies in Worcester contributed seventy dollars for the purchase of books, and on the 23d of the same month Count Schwabe laid the foundation of a library by the gift of a large number of volumes. This benevolent gentleman was a German living in Waltham. He was a resident of South Carolina when the war broke out and, not sympathizing with rebellion, made his way north as expeditiously as possible, from that time throughout the whole war devoting his time and his money to the promotion of the Union soldiers' comfort and welfare, more especially, it would seem, in establishing libraries for the hospitals. He founded one for Readville.

But contributions of books, engravings, photographs, paintings, etc., flowed in from other sources, notably from the Society of Rev. Dr. Hill in Worcester, from the citizens of Hampshire County through S. C. Bridgeman, Esq., of Northampton, from Mrs. Theo. Brown and from the pupils of Miss Baker's school in Worcester, but in largest proportion from Mrs. Mary L. Putnam of Boston.

Eleven hundred volumes were accumulated. They were cared for in a room in the college building especially fitted up and prepared for the convenient use of the soldiers as a meeting and reading room. The book-shelves bore the names of distinguished officers of the Union army, including many belonging to Worcester, who had fallen

in the war. Among Worcester names so honored were those of Lieutenants Grout and Spurr, Surgeon Haven of the 15th, Colonel Ward, Adjutant McConville, Captain Bacon, Captain Gird and others.

The library itself, by a special military order of the Surgeon in charge of the post, received the name of the Putnam Library, in honor of Lieut. W. Lowell Putnam of the 20th Mass. Volunteers, who lost his life in the disastrous battle of Ball's Bluff on the 21st of October, 1861. The life and death of this brave and noble young man constitute one of the most fascinating personal histories of the war. It was in grateful recognition of the honor conferred upon the memory of her heroic son by giving his name to the library that Mrs. Putnam made the large contribution to which I have referred. Her gift consisted of five hundred dollars' worth of books, and a large number of very valuable engravings, all of which young Putnam had collected in a long residence abroad, and had brought home with him on his return just before his enlistment in the army.

I am very glad to be able to supplement this brief account of Mrs. Putnam's gift by the mention of some interesting facts which have come to my knowledge relative to its disposition, its growth and development since Dale Hospital was discontinued. I have learned through the interest taken in the subject by my friends, Mr. Wilson, librarian of Clark University; the Hon. A. S. Roe and the publishers of the Worcester Evening Gazette, that the contribution of books and engravings made by Mrs. Putnam was returned to her when the hospital was given up and that they were subsequently sent by her to the National Soldiers' Home in Dayton, Ohio.

And I have learned that Mrs. Putnam, during her life, made additions regularly to the collection, that since her death her daughter has regularly added to it, that the library which has thus accumulated is kept apart by

itself, that it now numbers 11,500 volumes, that it bears the name of Putnam Library in honor of Lieut. W. Lowell Putnam, and that a superb portrait of Lieut. Putnam adorns the library walls. But I have learned also what seems very remarkable, that the early history of Putnam Library, located in Worcester, was wholly unknown at the Soldiers' Home until the receipt there of a letter of inquiry from Mr. Wilson. The catalogue, which I have seen, shows that books have been selected with intelligent care and good judgment and at great cost, and that the collection is one of great value.

REJOICINGS.

On the fall of Richmond, the surrender of General Lee and the practical collapse of the Rebellion, the hospital distinguished itself by its participation in the general rejoicing. On the occasion of the grand illuminations in the city it literally covered itself with glory. The *Spy* of April 12th, 1865, says: "The grandest and most remarkable display was at the Dale Hospital. The wounded soldiers were jubilant over the downfall of the Rebellion, and the most feeble of the patients made efforts to assist in the illumination of the buildings. Over ten thousand lights were displayed from every point in the extensive buildings, even high up to the turrets, and from the city it had the appearance of a beautiful temple of light."

The *Palladium* of the same date says: "Dale General Hospital threw out the glare of more than ten thousand lights, making a magnificent exhibition which was visible miles away. The beautiful Temple of the Sun in Palmyra, the city of Zenobia, could not have shone with more magnificence than did the hospital from basement to highest turret. The overjoyed soldiers, sick and maimed as they were, have thus added their contribution to the glad season of rejoicing."

It is sad that an occasion otherwise so jubilant should have been marred by a serious accident, yet I find it recorded as a part of a remarkable day's history that "during the firing of two hundred guns at Dale Hospital one of the soldiers lost his right arm."

MUSTERING OUT.

On the 24th of May, shortly after these rejoicings, one hundred of the soldiers were mustered out of service to return to the life of civilians, and I find in that connection the following newspaper item of interest: "The patients at Dale Hospital were addressed Thursday evening at the chapel by Dr. C. N. Chamberlain, surgeon in charge of the hospital. His address was prepared in view of the approaching discharge of a large number who are to be retired to the peaceful pursuits of civil life, under the operation of the late orders of the War Department.

The lecture was one of great ability, and must have been preceded by a profound study of American history, as also by a close observation of the events of the war. It was entitled, "Has it Paid?" and was listened to by a crowded audience. At its close a question put by the chaplain whether the soldiers endorsed its spirit and conclusions was answered by an enthusiastic "Yes."

A STRAWBERRY PARTY.

Many a kind and thoughtful remembrance and attention reminded the invalids from day to day that they were among friends, and that their services to their country were gratefully appreciated. A single instance, of which I find extended notice, illustrates this, and gives at the same time an idea of the kind of diversions friends devised to relieve the monotony of hospital life.

On the 26th of June, 1865, a number of ladies of Leicester and Worcester arranged a party at the hospital in

honor of the soldiers, who were invited to partake of the fruits of the season. In one of the pavilions, on a long row of tables neatly covered and adorned with a fragrant array of splendid bouquets, were spread strawberries and cream, cake and ice cream. Before the party were seated Dr. Chamberlain, who presided, made some remarks and Chaplain Clark offered prayer. The soldiers and officers were waited upon by the ladies, and to those who were unable to leave their beds the delicacies were carried.

At the end of the feast Dr. Chamberlain thanked the generous donors, and called upon the Rev. Samuel J. May of Leicester, who was present, to address the soldiers. Mr. May was introduced as one of the original Abolitionists, and my account states that his remarks were listened to with extraordinary attention and frequently applauded, especially when he spoke of how great an honor it was, and how great a dignity it imparted to a man to be called a soldier of the United States, which was a synonym with a soldier of liberty and freedom. He hoped that every man present was conscious of this great honor, and would strive to keep it free from blemish, by never doing a mean or unworthy act. With songs and cheers of the soldiers and officers the party withdrew.

But with the ending of the war the disbanding of the army and the desire of even the sick and disabled to return immediately to their homes and families, the need of numerous hospitals was passing away. The government had already begun to discontinue them. Camp Dix at Readville and the hospital there were both given up in August. Dale, however, was for a time retained; why, I do not certainly know, though I think it very possible it may have been to see what would be the result of an effort which was on foot to have the State of Massachusetts purchase of the national government the buildings and equipment for an asylum, where such invalid soldiers

as were permanently disabled by illness or wounds contracted in the service, and who had neither home to go to nor means to support themselves, might be taken care of at the expense of the Commonwealth. This received the support of the newspapers throughout the State, editorially and by correspondence. Appeals in its behalf were made to the Governor and to the Legislature, but nothing came of the movement and the subject was dropped.

Meanwhile no event of great importance in the history of the hospital occurred. Dr. Chamberlain, who had been surgeon in charge from the beginning, was relieved at his own request on the 29th of September, 1865, and retired to private practice in Lawrence, where he lived many years, a greatly respected physician, and an honored citizen. He was succeeded at the hospital by Surgeon E. T. Martindale of the United States army.

But the days of the hospital were numbered, and in December, 1865, it was discontinued. In the spring of 1866, the buildings, stores and equipment were sold at public auction and removed. The hospital was an admirable provision for its purpose, and did excellent service during the short term of its existence. It was but fourteen months from the admission of the first patient to its discontinuance. It would have been an ideal provision for a soldiers' home, and its retention for that purpose would have been an economy. It represented an expenditure by the government of more than seventy-five thousand dollars, and it seemed a waste to dismantle and destroy it. It was worthy of a better fate.

Mr. Cephas N. Walker, who was a Union soldier and an inmate of the hospital November, 1864, to August 15, 1865, remarked that the institution was divided into twelve wards, he being cared for in the sixth ward, which was at that time under the charge of Dr. Lyon. The entire grounds were enclosed by a high picket fence; but that

obstruction was not sufficient to keep all the convalescent soldiers from getting out now and then. Mr. Walker also told of some of the pranks the boys resorted to for enlivening in a measure the long weary hours of their confinement there.

Major F. G. Stiles, on being called upon, stated that his regiment occupied the barracks at Readville which was referred to by Dr. Gage, but that he knew very little about this hospital, as he was on duty at the front during the life of that institution.

Mr. Crane, in speaking of the value of the paper read by Dr. Gage, said a question had been answered which had been put to him by a New Hampshire soldier regarding the time when the Readville Hospital was abandoned, and that he knew of no person living so well qualified by personal knowledge and experience to furnish the information embodied in the admirable paper we have just heard read, as the writer, Thomas H. Gage, M. D. Mr. Crane also referred to an organization in Worcester known as the Relief Association with headquarters on Foster Street, which was helpful in caring for the comfort of the sick and disabled soldiers during the Civil War. In the winter of 1864 a grand fair was held under the auspices of that association for the purpose of raising money with which to care for the disabled soldiers. He closed his remarks by moving that a vote of thanks be extended Dr. Gage for his valuable paper, which was adopted by a unanimous vote.

PROCEEDINGS.

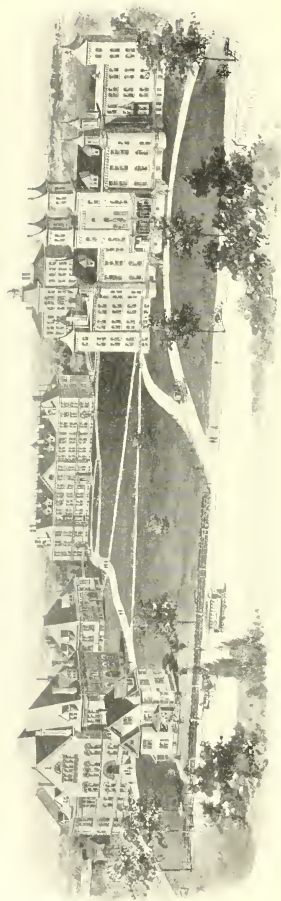
THE FOUR HUNDRED TWENTY-THIRD MEETING
TUESDAY EVENING, FEBRUARY 5, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society. Owing to the severe cold weather and a raging storm, the attendance was small, and the meeting adjourned for one week.

Tuesday evening, February 12, 1907, the Society met at its rooms, President Maynard occupying the chair. Others present were Messrs. Arnold, Crane, Davidson, Ely, Geo. Maynard, Paine, Williamson, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Smith, H. E. Kimball, Mr. Maynard, Miss Grover and others.

The Librarian reported additions for the past month: ninety-five bound volumes, one hundred sixty-one pamphlets, one hundred seventy-two miscellaneous papers and one relic for the Museum, the latter being the army saddle ridden by Major Edward T. Raymond in the Vicksburg campaign during the siege of Vicksburg and campaigns in Kentucky, Tennessee, including the siege of Knoxville and the Virginia campaign under Grant from and including the Wilderness to the end of the war. Five horses were shot and killed under this saddle from May 6 to June 4, in 1864, while in action and on the following dates: May 6th, 10th, 12th, 18th and June 4th.

The Committee on Nominations presented the following list of names and the persons thus represented were elected to active membership in this Society: Fred Alden Barnes, Austin Phelps Cristy, Oliver Milo Dean, Samuel R. Heywood, Edwin B. Luce, Samuel Gaylord Nash, Albert



THE WORCESTER ACADEMY.

1907

Frederick Richardson, Fred Leicester Willis, Mark Nicholas Skerrett, Charles Spaulding Bacon, Herbert Clark Fisher, Alonzo Francis Hoyle, George Samuel Maynard, Oliver Willis Rugg, Frank O. Stevens, Joseph Henry Walsh.

On motion of Mr. Crane the question of having an assistant to the Secretary, as recommended by the President in his inaugural address, was referred to the Executive Board with power to act.

Mr. Edward F. Coffin was elected to fill the vacancy caused by the resignation of Hon. Ledyard Bill in the Standing Committee on Nominations. The paper announced for the evening was then read —

ORIGIN AND EARLY HISTORY OF THE BUILDING NOW KNOWN AS DAVIS HALL,

THEN RECOGNIZED AS THE
NEW ENGLAND BOTANICO-MEDICAL COLLEGE, WORCESTER,
MASSACHUSETTS.

BY ELLERY BICKNELL CRANE.

The city of Worcester abounds in charming and most picturesque locations, not only for private homes, but for public buildings, homes for the aged, the weak and the unfortunate, also for her religious and educational institutions.

About the year 1844 a gentleman came to Worcester, locating on Walnut Street. His name appears in the directory for the year 1845 as *Rev. Calvin Newton*, physician, residence No. 1 Walnut Street.

The following year, 1846, the title of *clergyman* was omitted in the directory. One year later he is found at the head of an establishment styled the Botanic Infirmary and Bathing Rooms at numbers 1, 2 and 3, corner of Front and Short Streets, the latter now Carlton Street.

In 1849 to 1851, inclusive, his address was at 36 Front Street. Another change came in 1852, when his name appears with that of our revered ex-Mayor, Dr. Frank H. Kelley, now deceased, as Newton & Kelley, number 34 Front Street.

Dr. Newton in 1846 became the editor of the "New England Medical Eclectic and Guide to Health," a publication for the purpose, as it claimed, to proclaim true and scientific principles in medicine. To quote his own statement: "Our endeavor will be the wide dissemination of medical truth; and were it possible, we would gladly be professionally what *One*, infinitely greater than ourselves, was morally and spiritually, a light to enlighten every man that cometh into the world."

In addition to conducting his practice and writing for his magazine, he devoted a portion of his time to the instruction of a medical class. This instruction was given by recitation and by lectures. And it was asserted by W. B. P. (who perhaps was Willard B. Parks), then an attendant at this institution, that the lecturers here, upon the various branches of medical study, were superior to those who lectured upon the same branches in the Boston school.

Mr. Parks thought he could speak with authority, having attended a course of lectures at the medical school in Boston the previous winter.

Thus was started the organization known as the New England Botanico-Medical College, and Dr. Calvin Newton was the President. During the early period of this Worcester medical school twenty-two lectures were delivered of an hour each in the different departments during each week.

The first anniversary of this school occurred on Wednesday, the third day of June, 1846. Prof. I. M. Comings, M. D., of the Southern Botanico-Medical College at Macon, Georgia, delivered the address.

Among the names of the Board of Trustees may be found A. R. Porter of Danvers, Mass.; Prof. I. M. Comings, Madison, Ga.; Dr. Benjamin Colby, Providence, R. I.; Dr. J. S. Andrews, Sterling, Mass.; Dr. O. B. Lyman, Norwich, Conn.; Dr. J. A. Tenney, Worcester, Mass.

Through a notice issued under the date of June 1, 1846, we learn that Dr. Newton was then erecting a building at the corner of Front and Carlton Streets, and from June 1st until it was ready for occupancy he would be found at No. 14 Front Street, up stairs.

Under date of June 16, 1846, the following names of graduates from the institution were announced: John A. Andrews, Worcester; Daniel Davis, Webster; Adams Perry, Uxbridge; Jonas W. Chapman, Boston; Lloyd Goodnow, Quincy; Joseph Jackson, Boston; Winslow B. Porter, Walpole, N. H.

At this time two vacancies in the Board of Trustees had occurred. Dr. Sumner Jacobs of Springfield, Mass., had died, and Dr. C. W. B. Kidder had resigned. The places were filled by the choice of Dr. Isaac Jacobs of Bangor, Maine, and Dr. Abiel Gardner of Poughkeepsie, N. Y. It was also voted to add four to the existing number of trustees. Those selected were Dr. Justin Gates of Rochester, N. Y.; Dr. Gerry Ross, Middlebury, Vt.; Dr. John F. Jenison, Swanzey, N. H., and Dr. C. W. Staple of Farmington, Me.

The next course of lectures was to commence on the second Monday in March, 1847, and continue fourteen weeks.

Professors I. M. Comings, M. D., Calvin Newton, M. D., L. Bankston, M. D., and William H. Fonerden, M. D., were elected to fill the various departments of anatomy, surgery, physiology, pathology, materia medica, etc.

Plans were also made to apply to the Legislature at their next session for a charter. Till that time the

college was to avail itself of the rights and privileges granted by the Legislature of Georgia to the Southern Botanico-Medical College, a branch of which the Worcester Medical College at this time purported to be.

Under the date of October 1, 1846, notice was given that the office at the corner of Front and Carlton Streets was ready for occupancy, and Dr. Newton could be found there, although his residence was at the corner of South-bridge and Myrtle Streets.

Perhaps no science has advanced more rapidly during the century just closed than that of the practice of medicine and surgery. Although the old school practitioners were more or less jealous of the new, the combined efforts of the two have wrought most wonderful progress in the direction of a nearness to perfection in the art. 'The feeling of jealousy and hatred toward some of the Eclectics became severe, and in some cases resulted in public demonstrations. Dr. Potter of Springfield, Mass., was waylaid by four of the regular doctors (Stoddard, Temple, Boucher and Miller), who used their canes over his head to their hearts' content. But it is presumed that measures were not often carried to such extremes.

The Worcester Medical College continued on its way, educating and turning out into the field of labor its class of physicians, and at the same time continuing its application to the Legislature for a charter, which was on several occasions refused.

In December, 1847, arrangements were being made to renew the petition for a charter and the effort was to be supported by a long list of signatures secured for the purpose. It was also suggested that a college building would be erected.

The fourth anniversary of the institution took place in the upper city hall in Worcester, on Wednesday, June 6, 1849. There were eleven graduates: Albertus G. Bliss,

David Calkins, William Carpenter, John R. Durell, Stephen C. Libby, William T. Park, Daniel W. Reid, Levi Reuben, William J. Sumner, John W. Sweetland and S. C. Witherby.

Special exertions were put forth by friends of the institution to secure the coveted charter and place the school on a permanent foundation. The corps of professors was increased and many new appliances added to assist the faculty in both illustration and demonstration. Stephen Cutler, M. D., had been elected general agent for the college to secure funds for the purpose of purchasing land, erecting buildings and otherwise equipping the institution.

The managers of this school and their co-workers styled themselves the friends of medical reform, and the spring of 1849 found them in possession of a legal existence for their institution. And the editor of the *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal* writes: "Never before in the history of legislation in Massachusetts was there such a piece of folly perpetrated by the Legislature as the incorporation of this school. The professors must laugh in their sleeves when out of sight of their pupils and patients; aye, and that is not all—laugh at the General Court, the Governor and his dignified associates who gave the finishing touches to the parchment of their miscalled medical institution. There were twenty-nine students attending the lectures of the school recently."

The fee charged for a full course was fifty dollars, in advance, with a matriculation fee of three dollars. Of those who had attended two full courses at other medical colleges ten dollars only was required. Graduates were to be charged, in addition, eighteen dollars for a diploma.

November 1, after having secured between six and seven thousand dollars in subscriptions, Dr. Cutler resigned as agent of the institution.

The fifth anniversary of the institution was held Wed-

nesday, June 12, 1850, five graduates receiving their diplomas.

Some of the people of Worcester now offered to give their aid in the form of a building lot on which the college might stand. Messrs. Lazell, Thurber, Allen and Wheelock proposed to donate a lot of land; Messrs. Colton, Jaques, White and others made similar propositions, as did John F. Pond and Judge Chapin, who was then Mayor of the city, with the result that the lot offered by Mr. Pond was accepted. And there, on Union Hill, the building was erected which has proved quite an attraction not only to visitors of Worcester, but travelers passing through the city on the various railway trains have, especially in former years, frequently inquired what that building was used for.

The building, as originally designed, was of the Romanesque order and the late Elbridge Boyden was the architect, a man to whom we are greatly indebted for many of the attractive and substantial structures in Worcester at the present time.

Of this Worcester Medical College Mr. Alpheus M. Merrifield was the contractor, and the month of July, 1851, found the building well under way.

The sixth anniversary of the school was held June 25, 1851, when fourteen of the senior class received the degree of Doctor in Medicine. They were from nine different states in the Union.

It had confidently been expected that the building would be ready for occupancy before the close of the last term of the year, but owing to many discouraging circumstances, principally the lack of money, the work had been delayed. Now there seemed a prospect of having it ready for the beginning of the term of 1852, commencing on the first Thursday in March.

The class of 1851 at the institute numbered forty stu-

dents. Whether there was an increase in the attendance the following year, have not been able to learn.

But the seventh anniversary exercises were held on June 23, 1852, in Æsculapian Hall in the institute building. The President, Dr. Calvin Newton, presided; Prof. Parrit delivered the address, and the Worcester Cornet Band furnished music for the occasion. Ten students received the degree of M. D., one of them Lucinda S. Hall of Concord, N. H. Robert B. Carswell of Lowell was the valedictorian. Three different states were represented by these ten graduates.

The faculty had at last found themselves in possession of a fine, commodious building, delightfully situated, which was no small achievement on their part. But in order to sustain such an institution they must have a considerable number of students to give it patronage.

The world is always well supplied with radical reformers working along various lines. At this time it was on the art of healing the sick and like all new, untried enterprises, the public was slow to patronize it at once, especially with contributions of money, which was at this time greatly needed. But the college building with its eight towers had been completed and was now occupied. What remained to be done was to see that it was properly supported. That was the trial to be met and we are quite sure that the verdict was not what those most interested hoped for.

Whether the eighth anniversary was observed in 1853 or not we cannot now say, but presume it was.

The death of Prof. Calvin Newton, which occurred August 9, 1853, was a severe blow to the future life and prosperity of the institution, for it deprived the faculty of the originator, president, and chief supporter of the scheme.

In the office of President Dr. Newton was succeeded by

the Hon. Sullivan Fay. William Bush, Esq., was Secretary; and the institution continued to exist until the property passed to other hands some two years later.

CALVIN NEWTON, M.D.

Professor Calvin Newton, M.D., was born in Southboro, Massachusetts, November 26, 1800; was the son of Josiah and Elizabeth (Haynes) Newton. His father, Deacon Newton, was a prominent citizen in the town, where he occupied many offices of trust and responsibility; was also a Representative in the Legislature. His mother was a woman of noble and benevolent character. Young Calvin, even in his childhood, displayed a great aptitude for study, taking up grammar at the age of seven years in company with his brother, the late Rev. Gideon J. Newton, when it was found that he could master it equal to children much farther advanced in years. At the age of twelve years he was remarkably proficient in mathematics. His early education was obtained in and near his native town.

He was of a mirthful nature, although not inclined to follow after the follies of youth. At an early age he was competent to teach a town-school, which employment assisted him to prepare for college, entering Brown University in 1820, where he remained three years, when he was transferred to Union College, from which institution he graduated with class of 1826, receiving the degree of A. B. and later that of M. A.

Soon after leaving college he taught the high school in Worcester for one year, during which time he became convinced that it was his duty to preach the gospel, having been converted and baptized while attending college in Providence. He now united with the Baptist Church in Southboro, from which he received license to preach,

and entered Newton Theological Institution, graduating therefrom in 1829. That same year he was ordained pastor of the Baptist Church at Bellingham, Mass.

In 1832 he was elected to a professorship in Waterville College, now Colby University, which place he occupied five years, resigning in 1837 to accept the presidency of a newly established theological institution in Maine, at Charleston. One year later the school was removed to Thomaston, where Mr. Newton remained three years.

In April, 1842, Mr. Newton became pastor of the First Baptist Church in Grafton, Mass. The historian of that town says of our subject that he was probably the most scholarly man and writer ever settled over this church; that the first six months of his pastorate was attended with good results, thirty-five persons being added to the church, the largest number, with the exception of one year, in the history of the church. Here he was admonished by failing health that there must be a change in his occupation, and in 1843 resigned this charge to take up some pursuit requiring more active physical exercise.

For many years he had given some attention to the study of medicine and was convinced that many errors existed in the allopathic system which might be corrected; that no system had reached perfection and was not likely to do so in his generation, and being unable to attend to the clerical profession he determined to prepare himself for the practice of medicine, which would also give him the privilege to attend to the soul. He pursued a regular course of study, graduating at the Berkshire Medical Institution and was admitted a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society and settled in Worcester.

He saw that much ignorance prevailed among the reform practitioners; that there were no reform schools nearer than Ohio or Georgia, therefore it seemed desirable to establish a school in some part of New England, and

Worcester was selected as the best location for such an institution. And he began in earnest to bring about such a result, putting forth all his powers, contributing largely from his means in company with other friends of the scheme to make it a success. He was the moving spirit of the institution and gave his life to the cause. Although interested in many benevolent movements, his chief concern now was to establish the practice of a purely innocent and sanative medication. Although he was enjoying a lucrative practice, at the solicitation of friends gave that up in part to devote his talent in editing a medical journal and had in preparation nearly completed a series of works on theory and practice of medicine. As an active worker in the Mass. Physico-Medical Society, was chairman of the committee to draft a constitution for that society in 1851, and during the remainder of his life was specially interested in the prosperity of that institution.

In 1852 Prof. Newton was elected President of the National Eclectic Medical Association, which met that year at Rochester, N. Y., and chosen one of a committee to prepare the annual address for the next meeting of the association to be held at Philadelphia. That same year he was elected professor of general and special pathology in the Syracuse Medical College, filling that chair, it is said, with special credit.

During the last lecture term of the Worcester Medical Institution his time was so fully occupied with duties there that he resigned his chair at Syracuse and gave the entire time to his Worcester interests until stricken with typhoid fever, of which he died August 9, 1853, at his home in Worcester.

Prof. Newton was married in 1828 to Millicent Johnson of Framingham, a lady of intellectual and moral character, who survived him thirty years or more. Not having

children of their own Dr. Newton and his wife took special pleasure in helping boys and young men who were desirous of obtaining an education, and many a one might testify to the helpfulness received at that home, among them Rev. George D. Boardman, D. D., who was with them from boyhood till through college; the Judson boys, Rev. Dr. Bosworth, Calvin W. and Horatio G. Newton, nephews of the professor, the first a young man of great promise, the latter a successful and much beloved physician, and A. W. K. Newton, a skillful surgeon for more than forty years.

Although the period of service for which this structure (now referred to as Davis Hall) was originally designed proved exceptionally brief, its adaptability and usefulness were immediately recognized by another educational institution, having for its object the imparting of knowledge to the feminine portion of our land.

This institution had its origin in the town of Amherst, where, on December 28, 1853, a number of persons connected with the Baptist denomination met by invitation in the lecture room of the Baptist Church. The meeting was organized with Rev. M. Ball, chairman, Rev. L. H. Wakeman, secretary. Rev. E. A. Cummings was assistant secretary, who stated the objects of the meeting. Prayer was offered by the Rev. D. M. Crane of Northampton, and a resolution was adopted as follows: That the Baptist denomination should take immediate measures to establish a female school of the grade of our colleges or universities.

Meetings were held in other towns, North Adams, Northampton, Three Rivers, and perhaps other places. At Palmer, February 1, 1855, a resolution was passed by the board: Whereas, citizens of Worcester were interested and proposed to be generous contributors to the funds for the endowment of the institution provided it should

be located in Worcester, the board was disposed to favor that location.

As a charter had been secured April 21, 1854, for a ladies' collegiate institute to be established in the town of Amherst, Mass., allowing the institution to hold property, real and personal, not exceeding one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, it was found necessary to have it changed April 11, 1855, by the following amendment: "in Amherst or such other town or city in this Commonwealth as may be selected by said corporation." It was also stipulated that ten out of the fifteen trustees constituting the board should be members of good and regular standing in the Baptist Church. July 24, 1855, a meeting of the board was held in Worcester in the lecture room of the First Baptist Church, and adjourned from there to the parlor of Deacon Orrin P. Gilbert, No. 26 Fruit Street, where the board was reorganized as follows: Lemuel Porter, D. D., president; other members of the board, Joseph C. Foster, Joseph M. Rockwood, Durel M. Crane, William Heath, Jones Rudd, J. E. Taylor, William H. Jameson, F. H. Caldicut, D. D., J. D. E. Jones, Levi Boutwell, Hon. Isaac Davis, LL. D., Hon. Ichabod Washburn. A set of by-laws was adopted and a vote passed locating the college in Worcester and a committee was appointed to select a site.

Prior to this meeting it had been stated to the board that the trustees of the Worcester Academy would be disposed, if the college was located in Worcester, to commit to their trust the funds of the Academy, and a committee was chosen to express to the trustees of the Worcester Academy their willingness to receive the funds of that board and give such guarantees as might be necessary. There seems, however, to have been another influence at work in locating this Ladies' Collegiate Institute in Worcester.

A special meeting of the board was held at the American House September 20, 1855, at which time Ichabod Washburn and Isaac Davis resigned from the board, and Hon. Henry Chapin and William H. Harris, Esq., were chosen to take their places. The committee on selecting a site for the institution were authorized to seal, execute and acknowledge papers locating the institution and insure the property of the corporation.

As has been stated, it was decided on July 24, 1855, to locate in Worcester. The board met here again on July 31, and continued their deliberations through to August 2 and 3, when the board adjourned to the 14th. In the meantime the committee on site made a proposition to John F. Pond and others interested in the location on Union Hill, occupied by the Worcester Medical Institute. It was that Mr. Pond and his friends should raise \$20,000 and the government of the medical college should make over their building and premises to this corporation (Ladies' Collegiate Institute) for \$12,000. Some further conferences were held with the final result that the institute should pay \$12,000 to the Worcester Medical College and Mr. Pond and his friends agreed to raise \$22,000 for the institution.

The committee acting for the ladies' institute then purchased of Mr. J. F. Pond 200,000 feet of land about this college building at ten cents per foot; the latter taking a mortgage for part pay of ten thousand dollars, payable in five years, and \$10,000 in cash subscriptions. The purchase also included: from the medical college 40,000 feet of land, with the college building thereon; the settees in the lecture room; articles of furniture such as stoves, tables, chairs, etc., for \$15,200, and 58,000 feet of land of William H. Harris on Aetna Street at ten cents per foot. The appraised valuation of the entire property was: college building, \$20,000; land, \$50,000; additional

buildings which the collegiate institute was bound by agreement to erect within a specified time, valued at \$50,000; making a total of \$120,000.

It was proposed to incorporate in the institution the domestic system similar to that then at South Hadley, and September 1, 1856, it was expected the institution would be ready for operation. Board, tuition, room rent, with rooms furnished, were to cost seventy-five dollars per year for each lady student; later changed to \$90, or \$30 a term.

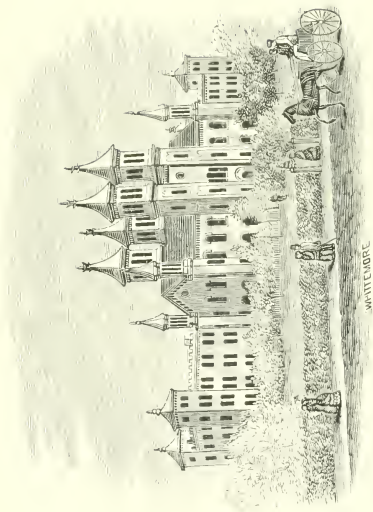
The contemplated additions to the main building were to be of sufficient size to accommodate four hundred students and to be completed within five years. October 17, 1855, Deacon Joseph White of West Boylston, William H. Harris and Freeman Upham of Worcester were chosen a building committee, empowered to make contracts and to proceed with the work of construction and to copy after Holyoke Seminary.

Dr. Porter resigned as President August 5, 1856, and Dr. Caldicutt was elected in his stead. Hon. Henry Chapin was given a prominent place upon committees while the work went on.

Teachers for the ensuing year were Louisa A. Loring, Abby A. Judson, and September 1, 1856, found the institution fairly under way. Qualifications for admission were the same as those required of young men for entering any of the colleges of New England.

It was proposed to maintain an introductory department for three or four years where young ladies could be fitted for the college course.

Worcester now seemed specially fortunate in her educational advantages. With the Ladies' Collegiate Institute on the easterly side of the city; Oread Institute on the west; the Boarding and Day School for Young Ladies at the north end, known as the Salisbury Mansion School; the Highland School on Salisbury Street; Worcester Acad-



The central or main building with its eight towers was erected for the Worcester Medical College, 1851-2. The north and south wings were added for the Ladies' Collegiate Institute, 1858-9.

emy, then located in the old Antiquarian Hall on Summer Street; College of the Holy Cross, and the various grades of public schools from the primary to the Classical and English High School, with free evening schools and suburban schools, Miss Robinson's School of Design in Clark's Block, also Prof. Bushee's school in the same block, certainly gave ample opportunity for Worcester's children of school age to gain an education.

In 1857 and 1858 Edward Earle was on the Building Committee, and on March 18, 1857, Rev. Joseph Smith was elected steward, to care for the college property and purchase the necessary supplies for the institution. The teachers for the year 1857 were Miss Whitney, Miss Bush, Lucinda T. Prescott, Abby A. Judson, Harriet Whitney, with Benjamin Allen as music teacher.

At this time the Rev. Horace James and Rev. J. D. E. Jones were actively engaged in the interest of the institution.

There are those still living who can recall the effect over the country of the panic of 1857 and 1858, when in some sections it was almost impossible to collect money due or absolutely promised. And merchants in some localities refused to sell their goods except for cash. The financial condition of the country was in such a state of stringency that the managers of this institution could not secure the necessary funds to carry out their plans or even meet their contracts. Resignations from the board of management were frequent and the effort to secure the needed cash was pushed with great vigor. But funds necessary for immediate wants in building additions were not forthcoming. President Caldicutt resigned in March, 1857. Edward Earle was elected as a member of the Board of Managers and November 16, 1857, Hon. Henry Chapin, who for more than two years had served on the board, resigned. There was evidence of an impending

crisis, although it was reported that the receipts from students were in excess of the cost of maintaining the school department.

It was also shown that the corporation had \$74,000 in real estate, with \$47,000 incumbrance upon it; \$50,000 in cash and real estate had been received on subscriptions, and there was yet \$48,000 of subscriptions uncollected. Various methods were used to secure money. The Board voted that any person or family giving \$20,000 might name the institution and Messrs. Dewey and Mason were employed as attorneys to try and collect money due on the subscriptions. The Legislature was also asked to aid the institution.

July, 1858, Werden Reynolds was professor of mathematics and President *pro tempore*.

In the winter of 1858 attempt was made to get the time extended in which the wings to the main building were to be constructed, but Mr. Pond and those interested with him were not disposed to relieve the board very much from the pledges it had made. The south wing was up, but not completed and ready for occupancy, although the southeast room was in part ready to receive day scholars.

March 14, 1859, Miss Mary Jane Woodward, Sarah M. Thomas, Lucy M. Richards, Addie Fuller, Martha J. Smith, Helen M. Brooks, Laura D. Stockwell and Sarah A. Cheney were given certificates of honorable dismissal. At this time Dr. Patterson heard recitations. Miss Anna Russell was teacher of music and at times was assisted by her sister, Jane Russell.

Mr. Joseph N. Joslin and his wife were in charge of the building and the grounds. All through the spring and early months of the year 1859 conferences were occasionally held with Mr. John F. Pond, with the hope of getting some relief from the obligation to construct

the additions within the time originally fixed. But apparently all arguments failed of the desired result in the interest of the college. The Board were evidently much discouraged; resignations were more frequent. May 6, 1859, Rev. George W. Gunnison was elected President, and the following month he resigned, to take effect September 1st. Prof. John B. Foster of Waterville College, Maine, was elected President on July 19, 1859, but he subsequently sent in his resignation. At this time, July, 1859, the teachers were Mrs. S. C. Carpenter, Miss H. P. Dodge, Abby A. Judson, Harriet Whitney, Jennie Russell, Ann Judson Stone. Officers of the board: Rev. Kendall Brooks, President; Rev. Joseph M. Rockwood, Corresponding and Recording Secretary; Rev. Joseph Smith, Treasurer; Rev. E. A. Comings, Financial Secretary; Rev. Joseph Smith, Steward. Committee on Instruction: Rev. J. D. E. Jones, Rev. Horace James, Rev. Kendall Brooks, Rev. A. N. Arnold, Rev. Joseph M. Rockwood. Prudential Committee: Edward Earle, J. D. E. Jones, Henry S. Washburn, Esq.; Building Committee: Joseph Smith, Edward Earle, Allen Harris, Esq.; Auditors: Albert Tolman, Joseph M. Rockwood.

Although Mr. John F. Pond had made some propositions, upon the acceptance of which he would extend the time for building and completing the additions, they were not acceptable to the Board, and they voted July 19, 1859, that the propositions of Mr. Pond could not be accepted.

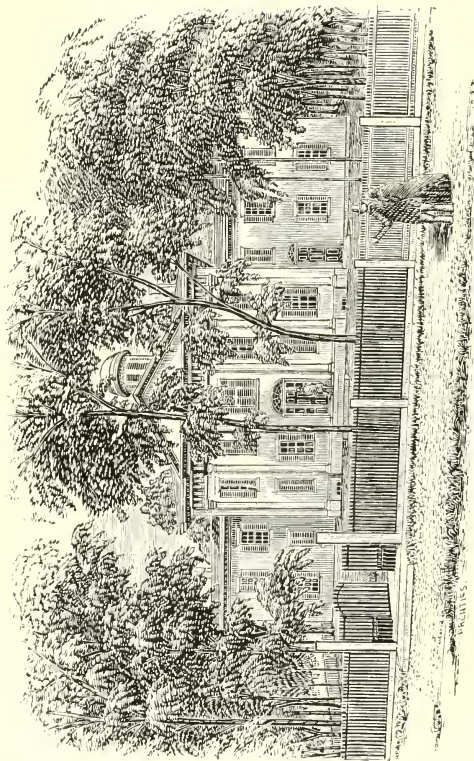
During the following month further effort was made to arrange matters with Mr. Pond.

And August 22, 1859, Werden Reynolds, associate principal of the Worcester Academy, was elected President of the college, and was, we presume, the last person to hold that office during the active existence of the institution.

August 31, 1859, Miss Abby A. Judson, who had been a teacher for three years, resigned, and Miss Julia P. Brooks secured to fill the quota of teachers. Then Miss Ann J. Stone resigned. At this time the permanency of the institution was in grave doubt; Mr. Pond was exacting; he wanted the north college building erected and certain ornamentations to the grounds carried out according to agreement, while the board of management were practically powerless, for the want of money, to do so. November 22, 1859, Jennie J. Tracy was engaged as a teacher, and also Mr. William H. Mirick, the latter as instructor in music.

During the winter of 1859 and 1860 renewed effort was made by all interested in the success of the college to obtain means for its continuance. A ray of hope came from the direction of the Massachusetts Legislature. A petition with an accompanying bill had been introduced asking for an appropriation of \$25,000. The bill passed the Senate, but failed to pass the House. The discomfiting report came to the Board at an adjourned meeting Monday, April 2, 1860, in the presence of Rev. Kendall Brooks, Rev. E. A. Comings, Rev. J. D. E. Jones, Rev. Joseph Smith, Werden Reynolds, the President, and Rev. J. M. Rockwood. Notwithstanding this discouragement Susan M. Ham and Mrs. M. S. D. Gomer were engaged to fill the vacancies in the list of teachers. And Rev. Dr. Huntington was to give the address at the close of the year, July 18, 1860.

Here the record book of the Board closes. And the closing acts in the history of the Ladies' Collegiate Institute in Worcester must be found in the movements of J. F. Pond.



ANTIQUARIAN HALL.
Worcester Academy, 1855.
American Antiquarian Building, corner Summer and Belmont Streets.

A CHAPTER IN THE HISTORY OF THE
WORCESTER ACADEMY.

BY MANDER A. MAYNARD.

The story I have to tell you to-night is not a history of Worcester Academy; it relates only to one incident in the long and prosperous career of that institution—but one of the most important incidents in its history.

My first experience at Worcester Academy was in the fall of 1859. The Academy was at that time located in the building formerly occupied by the American Antiquarian Society, at the corner of Summer and Belmont Streets.

The principal was Mr. Werden Reynolds, who, after several years of good work, was serving his last term. And Mr. Harrah J. Reynolds, now of Rochester, N. Y., a nephew of the principal, was his assistant. He was fresh from his studies—and the farm—and wore all winter not only the ruddy glow of health and a kindly disposition, but his cowhide boots, part of the time with his trousers legs tucked into the tops of the boots. He bore (when out of hearing) the appropriate title of "Boots." He was one of a family of nine children who all bore names that spelled the same forward or backward, as Asa, Anna, Hannah, etc.

Mr. Henry P. Boyden, afterwards editor of the Cincinnati Enquirer, was an assistant teacher at this time.

Our teacher in elocution at the school was Prof. E. Harlow Russell, now and for many years the principal of the State Normal School in our city. At that time principals were obliged to trade for the school, or in other words the school was "farmed out."

There was an invested fund of about \$20,000 beside the real estate, and the principal could have the use of the property, the income of the invested fund, and the

tuition of the pupils as his income. Out of this amount he must pay for all the running expenses, and have what was left over, or make up the deficit.

Mr. Werden Reynolds' successor as principal was Rev. James R. Stone, A. M., M. D. He was competent and popular, and always enjoyed seeing all of the titles and letters that belonged to him attached to his name.

From 1862 to 1865 I was absent from the city, but on my return I renewed my acquaintance at the Academy and found Mr. Albert P. Marble in charge as principal. He afterwards served for twenty-five years as superintendent of schools for the city of Worcester.

During the first week in February, 1868, the following petition came to the notice of friends of the school and caused no small stir among them. Mr. Marble was naturally quite interested in the matter. A meeting of twelve or fifteen people was held at the store of Mr. A. L. Burbank, 205 Main Street, and as no one seemed to know anything about the matter, a committee was sent to Boston to get a copy of the petition and any facts in regard to it. At an adjourned meeting held at the Academy building two days later, the messenger reported and brought back a copy of the petition and the names of the signers.

The petition was as follows:

To the Honorable the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled:

Humbly Shows
Your Petitioners that the Worcester Academy was duly incorporated & established at Worcester in the County of Worcester, and has been in operation for more than thirty years, that it has accomplished much good in the cause of Education. Since the Board of Education has been established and the common Schools of the State have been raised to a standard where young men in the Grammar and Classical high schools can be fitted for College as thoroughly as they can be at the best regulated Academies.

The great object of the Worcester Academy has been superseded by the high order of the Grammar and Classical schools. The Trustees of the Worcester Academy therefore pray that they may be permitted to transfer all the funds of the Worcester Academy to the Newton Theological Institution, a corporation established by Law at Newton in the County of Middlesex for the purpose of giving the young men who may desire it a primary course of instruction in Theological education.

The personal and real Estate of the Worcester Academy will amount to about thirty thousand dollars. The persons who contributed to found this Academy are desirous that the change should be made, as also the Trustees of both Institutions.

ISAAC DAVIS,	{	In behalf of the Trustees of Worcester Academy, being duly Authorised
J. D. E. JONES,		
DAVID WESTON,		

GARDNER COLBY,	{	In behalf of the Trustees of the Newton Theological Institution, duly Author- ised.

And bears the following endorsement:

Petition of the Trustees of the Worcester Academy and the Trustees of the Newton Theological Seminary asking that the funds of the Worcester Academy may be transferred to the Newton Theological Seminary.

SENATE, Feb. 6, 1868.

MR. NEEDHAM OF MIDDLESEX.

Referred to Com. on Parishes & Religious Societies.
Sent down for concurrence.

S. N. GIFFORD,
Clerk.

H. R. Feb. 7, 1868.

Concurred.

W. S. ROBINSON, *Clk.*

Committee on Parishes & Religious Societies.

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

SENATE, Feb. 11th, 1868.

The Committee on Parishes and Religious Societies to whom was committed the petition of the Trustees of the Worcester Academy and the Trustees of the Newton Theological Seminary asking that the funds of the Worcester Academy may be transferred to the Newton Theological Seminary have duly considered said petition, and

REPORT

That the petitioners have leave to withdraw.

Per order of the Committee,

DANIEL NEEDHAM,

for the Committee.

This report bears following endorsement:

LEAVE TO WITHDRAW.

Report of the Committee on Parishes & Religious Societies on the petition of Trustees of the Worcester Academy and the Trustees of the Newton Theological Seminary.

MR. NEEDHAM,
of Middlesex.

SENATE, Feb. 11, 1868.

Recommitted with instructions to hear the parties interested therein.

S. N. GIFFORD, *Clk.*

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

IN SENATE, Feb. 18, 1868.

Ordered, That notice of the petition of Isaac Davis and others, in behalf of the Trustees of the Worcester Academy, and Gardner Colby, in behalf of the Newton Theological Institution, praying for leave to transfer all the funds of the Worcester Academy to the Newton Theological Institution, be published in the Worcester Daily Spy, a newspaper published in Worcester, that said petitioners will be heard by the Committee on Parishes and Religious Societies, on FRIDAY, Feb. 28, 1868, at the State House, at 11 o'clock A. M.

EDW. AVERY,

Chairman Com.

Feb. 17, 1868, the following communication appeared in the Spv:

THE WORCESTER ACADEMY.—We notice that a petition has been presented to the Legislature asking permission to remove the funds of the Worcester Academy from this city and apply them to a purpose different from that for which they were contributed and are now used. Under the prudent management of Col. Davis this Academy has had a long, prosperous career; it has accumulated a generous fund, and to-day counts within its walls about one hundred students. The removal of this institution, which has been with us so long, and with which so many of our citizens connect personal reminiscences, would be a source of deep regret to numerous subscribers to the fund. But a grand reason why the removal should not be attempted will be found in the fact that there is an effort making to increase the fund by subscription in this locality, and to purchase the fine college buildings on Providence hill for the academy. A remonstrance to the petition now before the Legislature will be left for signatures at the store of A. L. Burbank, 205 Main street, and all who do not desire to have Worcester shorn of one of her old and creditable institutions, are requested to call and add their names to the remonstrance.

THE WORCESTER ACADEMY.

Mr. Editor:—I desire to make some reply to the paragraph on the Worcester Academy in your paper of this morning. The paragraph commences—“We notice that a petition has been presented to the legislature asking permission to remove the funds of the Worcester Academy from this city and *apply them to a purpose different from that for which they were contributed and are now used.*” Now these funds were contributed expressly to establish a *Baptist school*, particularly for the help of Baptist students for the ministry. Those of other denominations may have given small amounts, just as they might contribute to build a Baptist meeting house. The management of the school has always been in the hands of this denomination and special aid has been given to its ministerial students. When the school was founded,

the denomination needed it, and for years reaped constant advantage from it. The improvement in our public schools, which has killed or nearly killed almost all the academies in the state, has done away with this necessity. For thirteen years, I am told, this academy has sent not a student to college, and for nine years has helped no one into the ministry. It has long been a constant question with the trustees how the school could be made to fulfil its original purpose. At last it was proposed that its funds be united with those of another institution now efficiently doing just this work of preparing Baptist students for the ministry. The plan was devised principally by two citizens of Worcester, who have always been on the board of trustees, who, when the school was founded, subscribed \$10,000, or nearly one-third of its funds, and who ought to know what the design of its founders was. They proposed the plan expressly as meeting this design, and the other trustees agreeing with them, unanimously adopted it. The project was then laid before the Worcester Baptist Association, composed of the ministers and delegates of twenty-two Baptist churches in Worcester county, the body which originally had full charge of the academy, and the following resolution was unanimously passed:

Whereas, we have been advised that a proposition is being entertained by the trustees of the Worcester Academy to transfer the funds of that institution, under certain conditions, to the Newton Theological Institution, *in the belief that the object for which these funds were originally contributed can thus be more fully secured; therefore,*

Resolved, that we heartily approve of this proposition; and take occasion the rather to express this feeling because the funds under consideration were mainly drawn from the churches composing this body.

Undoubtedly the proposed change would apply the funds to a purpose different from that for which they are now used, for they are now doing nothing in the work for which the donors designed them.

The paragraph of this morning goes on to say, "Under the prudent management of Col. Davis this academy has

had a long, prosperous career." Unquestionably Col. Davis has done all for the school that any man could do, and but for him it might have been extinct years ago; but a classical academy has certainly a doubtful prosperity which does not prepare a student for college in thirteen years. Term after term, for five years at least, the teachers have almost invariably proposed to the examining committee to dispense with the public examination, because, as the principals have often said, the school was of so low a grade that a public examination would be for its disadvantage.

According to the frequent testimony of its teachers, a very small proportion of its pupils are average scholars, they being largely composed of those who, from illness, or dullness, or misconduct, or dislike of rigorous discipline, or some other cause, are prevented from attending the public schools of the city. In order to maintain its existence the school is obliged to have no standard, but gather "all of every kind, both bad and good." Even with this policy it has been reduced to about twenty pupils. Under the vigorous management of its present principal its numbers have quite largely increased, but if he be able to hold them there, his talents will soon gain for him a more pleasant and honorable and remunerative place, as they have for others before him, and the school will sink again. No school but of the lowest class can be sustained there.

Again, the paragraph of this morning says:—"But a grand reason why the removal should not be attempted will be found in the fact that there is an effort making to increase the fund by subscription in this local city, and to purchase the free college buildings on Providence hill for the academy." We beg to know who are making this effort. It is certainly without the authority or knowledge of the board of trustees. About a year and a half ago, the board did authorize such effort and appoint a committee to direct it, but shortly after the committee reported the futility of the project, it was dropped and the committee discharged.

It is at least doubtful whether the academy is of any advantage to the city. Probably it would be far better

that its pupils should be placed under the superior advantages and more rigorous discipline of our public schools. But if it were not so it would be manifestly unjust that funds raised by a religious denomination for its own good, and particularly for its ministry, should, by any technicality of law, be withheld from the denomination for the profit of others. If a Baptist, and I felt that the academy would *accomplish more for the denomination and its ministry* by remaining in Worcester, I could remonstrate against its removal; otherwise, by such remonstrances I should feel that I was trying to withhold from others what is theirs.

TRUSTEE.

Worcester, Feb. 17, 1868.

THE WORCESTER ACADEMY.

Mr. Editor:—In justice to the young ladies and gentlemen whom I have the honor to instruct, and to myself, I must correct the misstatements, and indignantly repel the false insinuations made, under the above title, in a communication to your paper of this morning.

What was the purpose of the founders of the academy can doubtless be ascertained from the proper sources; and whether the funds should be removed to Newton is not a question for me to decide. But if, to make out a case for or against such removal, it is necessary to defame those who attend my school, it becomes my duty to defend them. If the character of the school *has been* such as "Trustee" represents, the responsibility rests with him, not with me. That such is its character now, I deny.

My pupils are not affected with "illness, or dullness, or misconduct, or dislike of vigorous discipline, &c., to any unusual extent." It is not true that "in order to maintain its existence the school can have no standard," but is obliged to "gather all, both bad and good." If term after term for five years, at least, the teachers have proposed to the examining committee to dispense with public examinations, because the school was of so "low a grade that such examination would be for its disadvantage," that must have been before my day.

If this was designed for a theological school, the present principal should have been so informed, for he professes

no ability in that direction; but if it was designed for a literary institution, then it is not true that the "funds are now doing nothing in the work for which the donors designed them."

I wish to inform your correspondent that within a year one young man has entered college from this school, three are now fitting for college, and two are pursuing their academic studies with a view of entering, subsequently, the Christian ministry, and will receive aid according to the terms published in the catalogue.

My last term there were in actual attendance one hundred and ten students,—more than a hundred for the whole term. The spring term has just begun with ninety-four. This is sufficient answer to the not very flattering remark that "it is at least doubtful whether the academy is of any advantage to the city."

I have never known that my management of the academy was not satisfactory to the trustees. On the contrary, I have been assured by the officers of the board, that my action was fully approved: and this renders the communication of your correspondent the more remarkable. And I must believe that the sentiments expressed are his alone. Certain it is, that if that effusion be a sample of the kind of interest he feels for the academy, and the manner of expressing it, no one will look further for a cause of the deplorable state of things for the "last thirteen years," in so far as his influence extends. "If he were a Baptist," his interest might be of a different character.

A. P. MARBLE.

Worcester, Feb. 17, 1868.

After some discussion at the meeting in Mr. Burbank's store, a committee of ten was chosen of whom Gen. Jonathan Day, one of the contributors to the original fund, was chairman, to prepare and circulate a petition to the General Court against the transfer of the property of the Academy or its funds.

The petition is as follows:

To the Honorable Senate and House of Representatives
for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts:

Whereas certain petitioners have prayed your honorable body that the funds of the Worcester Academy may

be diverted from their present use and transferred to another institution out of this City and county and applied to a different object therefore, We, the undersigned, citizens of the County of Worcester and friends of education believing this Academy to be a very useful adjunct to the public schools of this vicinity as is evinced by its present liberal patronage, and believing that these funds ought not to be diverted to a use other than that for which they were subscribed, respectfully ask that the prayer of said petitioners may not be granted.

February 25th, 1868.

Jonathan Day,
A. L. Burbank,
James H. Bancroft,
Wm. E. Starr,
A. B. R. Sprague,
Geo. F. Hoar,
M. A. Maynard,

Josiah Pickett,
Wm. K. Crosby,
A. Anthony,
D. W. Haskins,
W. H. Barnes,
L. A. Ely,
L. J. Goodell,

and 275 others.

And bears the following endorsement:

Remonstrance of Jonathan Day and 290 others of Worcester Against Petitions for the transfer of the funds of the Worcester Academy, &c.

Presented by Mr. Williams of Worcester.

Ho. of Reps. Feb. 27, 1868.

Referred to the Committee on Parishes & Relig. Societies.

Sent up for concurrence,

W. S. ROBINSON, *Clk.*

SENATE, Feb. 27, 1868.

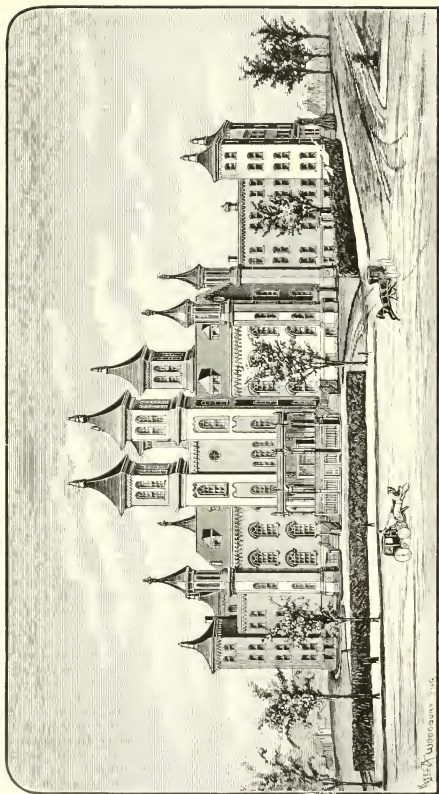
Concurred,

S. N. GIFFORD, *Clk.*

COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

IN SENATE, June 9, 1868.

The Committee on Parishes and Religious Societies to whom was re-committed their Report on the petition of the Trustees of the Worcester academy and the Trustees of the Newton Theological Seminary, have considered the subject, and being unable to agree as to the disposi-



DAVIS HALL, WORCESTER ACADEMY.

tion of the matter in controversy, ask to be discharged from the further consideration thereof.

EDW. AVERY,
Clerk.

SENATE, June 9, 1868.

Accepted.

Sent down for concurrence.

S. N. GIFFORD, *Clerk.*

H. R. June 9, 1868.

Concurred.

W. S. ROBINSON, *Clk.*

The petitioners for removal were evidently satisfied that the scheme could not be carried through, and it was dropped.

Several years after the property on Union Hill, used by Dale General Hospital, and for other purposes, was secured by the Trustees and the academy moved up onto "The Hill."

At a meeting of the Board of Trustees held that day Col. Davis reported as follows:

REUNION OF THE WORCESTER ACADEMY.—The reunion of the present and past members of the Worcester Academy was held yesterday afternoon and evening, and passed off very successfully and happily. The afternoon was spent at the Academy building in renewing old acquaintance and in discussing the events and associations of school life. Addresses were made by Hon. Isaac Davis, Rev. D. Weston, Rev. H. K. Pervear, and others, touching on the history and prospects of the institution.

Hon. Isaac Davis, president of the Academy, read his annual report to the trustees, of the standing and condition of the institution. The Academy was first opened for students in June, 1834, and at no period of its history till the present time has it been free from debt. Its assets in real and personal estate amount to over \$33,000,—now about \$750,000. It has given education since its foundation to over five thousand young men, among whom now

are Doctors of Divinity, Presidents of Colleges, professors, and men eminent in the law and in the various occupations and callings of life.

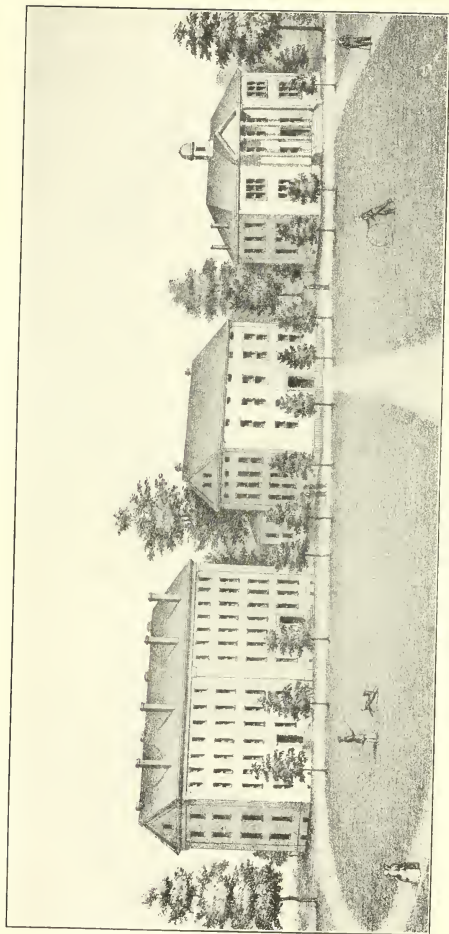
The institution was started with a subscribed fund of \$4000, and the committee to locate the academy, erect the building, employ teachers, &c., was Isaac Davis and Otis Corbett, Worcester; Joseph White, West Boylston; Edward Phillips, Sturbridge; and Otis Converse, Grafton. The purchase of land and the erection of buildings by this committee involved an outlay of about \$13,000, while the subscriptions did not exceed \$6000; and when the school was opened it was transferred to the board of trustees under the state charter. Mr. Davis refers to the fact that for thirty successive years he has been elected president of the board of trustees, and that he has consented to serve for so long a time only at the persuasion of his colleagues, till the institution should be free from debt. The time has now come, and with thanks to his associates for honors so frequently conferred, he asked to be relieved from his important and onerous position.

The evening entertainment at Washburn Hall included excellent vocal and instrumental music, social intercourse, a collation, and sentiments, with responses, speeches, &c. Among the speakers of the evening were W. J. Chase, toastmaster; Geo. H. Rice, president; Rev. D. Weston, and Messrs. Nelson Flagg, Frank B. Smith, A. L. Burbank, Mason A. Boyden, D. F. Lawrie, and others.

The association voted to hold an annual reunion at the end of each autumn term, and the officers of the association were constituted a committee of arrangements for the next reunion. The officers elected were, Aaron F. Greene, president; George H. Rice, vice-president; Frank B. Smith, secretary.

The Trustees accepted the resignation of Col. Davis and elected as his successor the gentleman who has so long and so successfully conducted the affairs of the institution, Hon. J. H. Walker.

And the elegant and commodious quarters that the academy now own and occupy, and its prosperous condition, are a complete justification of the position taken by



WORCESTER COUNTY MANUAL LABOR HIGH SCHOOL, 1835.
Incorporated 1834.
Main Street, top of rise between Oread and Benefit.

the remonstrants to the petition for the removal of the property from Worcester.

During the remarks that followed Mr. Nathaniel Paine gave some account of his connection with the WORCESTER COUNTY MANUAL LABOR SCHOOL, which was the beginning of the Worcester Academy. That institution was located on a farm on the easterly side of Main Street about opposite the Oread Institute; this farm extending easterly to the location of the Boston & Albany Railway tracks.

The school buildings were of brick and arranged along the summit of the rise of land easterly of Main Street and between what is now Oread and Benefit Streets.

They were taken down many years ago and the brick used in constructing some tenement houses on the northerly end of Canterbury Street.

The students at this Manual Labor School were composed of two classes socially, the first class being made up of those who paid for their tuition, the other from those who worked on the farm to pay for their schooling. The two classes were seated at different tables, Mr. Paine then being privileged to sit at the first table. However, there was no difference in the bill-of-fare as far as he could see, excepting that doughnuts were served at the first table and not at the second.

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND TWENTY-FOURTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, MARCH 5, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present were: Messrs. Arnold, Belisle, Crane, Davidson, Ely, Eaton, A. V. Hill, George Maynard, Newton, George M. Rice, Miss Smith, Mrs. Williamson, Charles R. Daoust, Mr. and Mrs. Gravel and others.

The Librarian reported that since the last meeting there had been received twenty-two bound volumes, fifty-two pamphlets, and several articles for the Museum, including a set of cards illustrating the coinage of the several nations of the world, and given in the proper colors of the various metals, gold, silver and copper.

Special mention was made of the gift of a Bible printed by Isaiah Thomas in 1793 from Jeanette A. W. Ramsay, who also gave ambrotype pictures of Eanos Dorr and his wife, formerly residents of Worcester, now deceased. The Librarian also referred to a medicine case and balances for weighing medicine, two hundred years old, originally the property of Dr. John E. Owens of Chepachet, R. I., presented to the Society by Mrs. Sophia Roper Harris.

The Committee on Nomination presented names of the following persons and they were elected to membership in this Society:

Charles A. Allen, William Herbert Balcom, Mrs. Nora Abbie Balcom, George Hammond Brown, Miss Rose A. Boyle, Charles H. Burleigh, Edward A. Cowee, Francis William Cavanaugh, Daniel E. Denny, James Francis Healey, Albert F. Hyde, Daniel Joseph Kelley, Frank P. Knowles, Charles F. Mann, Darius A. Putnam, Mrs. Alice Edna Putnam, Fred A. Ricker, Charles M. Smith.



TRAPPEUR CANADIEN-FRANCAIS.

President Maynard announced that Miss Emma S. Barrett had been appointed an assistant to the Secretary and was authorized to collect dues from the members and give receipts for the same.

Alexander Belisle, Esq., then presented the paper announced for the evening.

THE FRENCH CANADIANS IN THE DEVELOPMENT OF OUR COUNTRY.

BY ALEXANDER BELISLE, ESQ.

The well-known historian, Francis Parkman, describes the pioneers of the West as follows: "Their character was a mixture of civilization and primitive simplicity. They were exceedingly polite and gay, careless, indolent and improvident as their Indian allies." The French Canadians were the pioneers of the West, discovering and colonizing the neighborhood of the Great Lakes, the Mississippi, the Ohio and the Missouri rivers. They journeyed through the immense solitude of the West in its primitive and uncivilized beauty. They were the first to cross the Rocky Mountains, and trampled alike the sands of the great American desert and the fertile plains that border the gulf of Mexico.

Their spirit of adventure carried them so far that probably there is not a ravine in the West which was not visited by these bold and fearless explorers.

The first among civilized men to name the great lakes, rivers and mountains. Many of the names have been changed for others less appropriate, but enough remain to recall the fact that a very large part of what is now the United States was settled by the French and colonized by their descendants, the French Canadians.

More than two hundred years ago, the Canadians, prompted by the desire to gain new territory for France, their mother country, coupled with the passion for both personal gain and glory, started on their perilous expeditions. The traders

and Coureurs de bois (bushrangers), of which Perrot, Du-Lhut and Nicolet were the most accomplished, marked, or successful types, exercised great influence over the Indian tribes. As far back as 1641 the Jesuits Raimbault and Joques had gone as far as Lake Superior. Père Marquette founded Sault Ste. Marie, Michigan, in 1668, and with Louis Joliet discovered the Mississippi in 1673; La Salle completed the work by taking possession of Louisiana, which according to the treaty of Utrecht extended over the whole Valley of the Mississippi and westward nearly to the Rocky Mountains. The site of Detroit, Michigan, was first settled in 1685. Fort St. Joseph, now Chicago; Fort Duquesne, now Pittsburg, Pa.; Peoria, Ill., St. Louis, Vincennes, Ind., Green Bay, Mich., St. Clair, LaCrosse, Wis., St. Cloud, Dubuque, Iowa, and most of our leading western cities were founded by them.

At one time the possessions of France comprised the Great Lakes, the Mississippi, Ohio, Missouri and Illinois rivers, in all a territory of more than 900,000 square miles. When Wilkes visited Oregon in 1838, he found hundreds of Canadians who had preceded by many years the coming of Americans. They had gone as far north as Alaska and south as Panama. These explorers and colonizers, the founders of our greatest western cities, have not yet been appreciated at their worth. What privations they endured, fraught with dangers of all sorts, to accomplish their civilizing enterprise, no one can say. The Americans know well the history of their Daniel Boone, who has become a legendary hero, while many of the French Canadians have done more than the pioneer of Kentucky, and their names are unknown or rarely mentioned. True, many historical societies of the West have made laudable efforts to bring out of oblivion many of the names of the first French Canadians of the West. The lack of information or authentic documents has prevented historians from giving all the credit due to those intrepid voyagers who brought honor to the French Canadians in this country.

I shall give short historical sketches of some who are known

to history. These sketches are taken from the Works of Joseph Tassé, "*Les Canadiens de L'Ouest.*"

Charles de Langlade, whose family settled at Michilimacinae, now Mackinac, Wis., in 1727, was born there in 1729. There were very few whites at that time in and about that country. The various tribes of Indians were continually warring against each other. When only seven years of age, after interpreting a dream of the chief of the Ottawas he was selected to act as the Mascot of the tribe, for they believed that the child was especially protected by the great Manitou. That was their name for God. The Ottawas won repeated victories over their enemies, and it gave that boy a very great influence over the red men. When only twenty-five years old, he commanded an expedition against Gen. Braddock near the Monongahela, in which many Chiefs, among whom, it is thought, was the famous Pontiac, were his followers. Bear in mind that this was before the revolution. In all the important engagements against the English from Fort George, situated on Lake George in New York, to Wisconsin, Illinois and Louisiana, he took an important part. He was universally respected and esteemed by the Indians, and according to a declaration by Gen. Burgoyne he was a great soldier.

One day, after a victory, when his enemies, Commander Etherington and Lieutenant Leslie were bound and surrounded by Indians, prepared to be burned at the stake, Langlade arrived and cut the ropes, declaring that these men would be set free, that enough lives had been lost in battle without sacrificing any more. "If you want more lives," he said, "take mine, if you dare." His brave act saved the two lives from the blood-thirsty red men.

There wasn't much law in those far off days, but Charles Rhéaume, living at Green Bay, Wisconsin, was made the first Judge for the territory of Wisconsin and Indiana. His knowledge of law was very limited, consequently at times his judgments were somewhat biased; especially was this the case against the party in the suit having the most money

with which to pay the fees. On one occasion he sentenced the plaintiff to bring the Judge a load of hay, and the defendant was sentenced to bring him a load of wood. It was all profit for the Judge.

Jacques Porlier, a man of superior attainments, became a lieutenant in the militia and went to Green Bay about 1790. He was the first teacher in Wisconsin; and later, Chief Justice for Brown County. His education, public spirit, and affable manners won him the respect and esteem of all. Many volumes of his manuscripts are preserved by the Wisconsin Historical Society.

Joseph Rolette, a trader and a scholar, became agent of the Astor Co. He employed large numbers of Indians and his orders to them were as quickly obeyed as those of Napoleon to his soldiers. He established many industrial enterprises, and developed navigation on the Great Lakes and rivers. Governor Cass, recognizing his incontestable superiority, appointed him Chief Justice of Crawford County. Among his intimate friends were Zachary Taylor, later President of the U. S., and Rev. Gabriel Richard, who was twice elected to Congress. Henry Clay became very intimate with Richard and helped him in Congress in getting improvements for the West.

Solomon Juneau, the founder of Milwaukee, for a long time called Juneau City, left home in 1815, being then only 18 years old, and for more than two years never slept under a roof. At 21, alone with his wife and child, he settled in 1818 on the shore of the Milwaukee River. For many years his only permanent neighbors were the red men and the wild beasts of the forests. His log house and trading stores were about two miles from the shore of Lake Michigan. In 1835, a few others had settled near him, and his property and stores were worth \$100,000. In 1836 he built one of the first steamboats on Lake Michigan. Ten years later Milwaukee got its city charter. It had a population of about 10,000. He had given lavishly of his fortune to the church

and to the city. The Court House and the first public park were among his gifts. He was the city's first Mayor. He died in 1856 at the age of 59 years. S. W. Beal, later Lieut.-Governor of Missouri, says—"There has never been a trader on this continent for whom the Indians had greater respect." His funeral took place with all possible military and civil pomp. The *Daily Wisconsin* said, "Milwaukee did its duty well in the sorrowful event of to-day. Gratitude is not yet dead in the hearts of its people. We know how to honor dignity, integrity and virtue." Juneau had a remarkable physique, more than six feet tall, well built, with an air of grandeur and nobility that commanded respect.

Dubuque, Iowa, was founded by Julien Dubuque. He had settled in 1785 when only 23 years old, at Prairie du Chien. He at once became familiar with all the superstitions of the Indians. He impressed them so much by his ability to mystify them that he became their idol, and he was called upon to settle all their troubles and differences. The Indians were always obstinate in allowing the white men to know anything of the discovery of mines or other secrets of value, but Dubuque had so won their confidence that they made free and told him of the rich deposits of lead along the Mississippi. They did much better by giving him a tract of land 21 miles long and 3 miles broad. The U. S. having acquired the territory, Wm. Henry Harrison in 1806, then Governor of Louisiana, of which this was a part, ratified the treaty whereby the five tribes had given Dubuque this land. He died in 1810, aged only 45. The Indians so loved him that he taught them they must work and they obeyed him, for they recognized in him a wise counsellor and a protector who more than any other white man had won their affection. His funeral was of the kind described by Fenimore Cooper in "The Last of the Mohicans." For many years the Indians maintained a burning lamp at his grave.

Antoine Leclaire was an interpreter, speaking French, English and fourteen Indian dialects. He lived in Peoria,

then known as Mallet City, the name of its founder being Jean Baptiste Mallet. Leclaire became Indian Commissioner in 1825, having a territory extending 500 miles to St. Louis. He founded the city of Davenport, Iowa.

Joseph Thibault founded Beloit, Iowa. His son, Frank Thibault, founded Galena.

Jacques Duperon Baby, a man of superior education, was intrusted with very perilous expeditions in Virginia. Pontiac, the celebrated Huron Chief, was his intimate friend.

Joseph Rainville, a college bred man, served as interpreter to Lieut. Zebulon Montgomery Pike, in his expedition to explore the sources of the Mississippi. Rainville commanded a company of Sioux in the War of 1812, and had such perfect control over them as to prevent atrocities being perpetrated on the prisoners of war. In 1820 he was appointed by the U. S. Government as guide and interpreter for the expedition for the exploration of the Minnesota River. In 1837 Jean Nicolet and John C. Fremont went to explore Minnesota, and reported to Congress that the protection given by Rainville to travellers, and his influence over the Indian tribes were worthy of special recognition. He translated large parts of the Bible into Sioux, also religious books, all of which were printed. In the thirties *The Missionary Herald* of Boston recognized in him a man of remarkable intellect, observant, capable of using the best language and translating verbally long verses of the Bible. As an interpreter he had no equals. In 1846 he died, aged 67, having lived nearly 50 years among the Indians and being known as one of the leading men in his State.

J. Baptiste Faribault was born in 1774. In the War of 1812 he refused to fight under the English flag, and was made a prisoner at Prairie du Chien. After peace was restored, he organized the first independent military company in Minnesota. Gen. H. H. Sibley says that Faribault was a man whose name deserves to be respected and preserved in the *Annals of Minnesota*.

His son Alexander Faribault founded the city of that name in Minnesota.

Henry Schuyler Thibodeau founded Thibodeau, La., at what was known as the Acadian Hills. That is the place where the English deported from their country the poor, inoffensive and peaceable Acadians.—an outrage that will survive to be the shame of England, because it has been recited in such sublime, soul-stirring verse in *Evangeline* by our great national poet, Longfellow.

Jean B. Lefevre accompanied Henry Schoolcraft during his visit among the Indian tribes dissiminated throughout the Northwest. He founded Superior City in 1853.

J. B. Perreault, a man of high education, went to St. Louis in 1783. He taught Schoolcraft the French language and furnished him most of the material with which to publish his work on *Indian Life in the Northwest*.

One of the most picturesque sites along the Mississippi River is occupied by the city of St. Paul, Minn. The State's motto is in French, "*L'Etoile du Nord*," "*The Northern Star*." Sixty years ago there were only a few small houses occupied by Canadian traders, surrounded by Indian villages. To-day it is a city of nearly 200,000 people. Vital Guerin, its founder, was born at St. Remi, near Montreal, in 1812. In October, 1839, he settled on the high plateau overlooking the beautiful panorama offered by the winding waters of the great river. The town of Mendota, a few miles south on the opposite shore, was occupied by French Canadians. Gen. Henry Hastings Sibley was then County Judge, living at Mendota, near Fort Snelling. Guerin married in 1841 and brought his bride to his log residence, 16 x 20 feet. He was of sturdy character and was always respected and esteemed by the Indians among whom he lived. He died at 58 years of age, in 1870. The city erected a monument to his memory in the Calvary Cemetery. The County Court House has a tablet stating that he gave the site for that magnificent building.

Pierre Boutineau could talk nearly all the Indian dialects. As interpreter and guide he accompanied the expedition of Colonel Noble to Fraser River in 1859; that of Captain Fisk in '62 to Idaho; and the one led by General Sibley to the Missouri River in '63. One of the Counties in Dakota was given his name.

J. B. Mallet founded Mallet City, Ill., now Peoria. In 1778 he organized an expedition and travelled several hundred miles with 300 Indians, went to Fort St. Joseph, now Chicago, on Lake Michigan and dislodged the English who held it. He allowed them to return to Canada, but confiscated \$50,000 worth of provisions and merchandise.

In 1812 the French Canadians living in western New York and Illinois sided with the Americans. They were assailed by Captain Craig and their property destroyed, and the Government ungenerously refused to indemnify them of their loss.

Pierre Ménard was born in Quebec in 1767. His father had taken an active part in the battle of the Monongahela, where Braddock was defeated. At 19 years of age, young Ménard left home for Illinois, 1100 miles away. He arranged with George Washington at Carlisle, Pa., for the defence of the American colonies against the English and their Indian allies. He became in 1808 a member of a large firm, doing business as far west as the Rocky Mountains. The Government in the early twenties recognized his ability and influence and selected him as Indian Agent. With Lewis Cass, then Secretary of War, he signed treaties with many tribes. He served several years in the Indiana Legislature, and became the President of the Legislative Council. (Illinois was detached from Indiana and made a state in 1818.) He was a man of good education but spoke English incorrectly. He was presiding officer of the Senate. He was the first Lieutenant-Governor of Illinois, and contributed materially in enacting wise laws for the state. In 1821 the Legislature decided to organize a State Bank and ask the U. S. Treasury

to accept its notes in payment for public lands. Ménard put the motion in the following language: "Gentlemen of *de* Senate, it is moved and second *dat de* notes of *dis* bank *me* made land office money. All in favor of *dat* motion, say aye; all against it, say no. It is decided in *de* affirmative. And now, gentlemen, I bet you one hundred dollars he never be made land office money." That his opposition was wise soon became apparent, for in a short time the bank nearly bankrupted the state. Ménard died in 1844, aged 77 years, in the village of Kaskaskia.

His brother, Col. Francois Ménard, became known as the King Navigator of the Mississippi. He was an exceedingly pious man. Usually after a perilous voyage he would at once, on reaching his destination at St. Louis or New Orleans, march to the church with his crew to offer thanksgiving to God for His protection. He was brave, fearing nothing except his Creator.

Col. J. B. Beaubien's grandfather emigrated to Detroit in 1740. Colonel Beaubien was born there in 1785. In 1812 he fought under Gen. Lewis Cass. Later he located where is now the city of Chicago. There was nothing at that period to indicate that the little settlement he made would become the principal city of the West. In 1821 Colonel Beaubien was joined by A. M. Kinzie. In that year the Indians asked the Governor for a priest, but he offered them a Presbyterian minister. They wanted to know if he wore a black robe or had he a wife and children; if so, they did not want him. So the Rev. Gabriel Richard of Michigan came to them. *He was the only priest who ever sat in the U. S. Congress.* In the winter of 1831-2, Colonel Beaubien organized a literary club, having regular meetings to discuss subjects of interest. They usually had a little dancing after every meeting. Some of the Canadians of those days, like people of to-day, needed refreshments. Marc Beaubien, a brother of the Colonel, got the first license issued in Chicago, at a cost of \$6.00. This was in 1832 when the total taxes of the settle-

ment amounted to \$150.00. Another brother of the Colonel, Medard Beaubien, was the President of the first town Council in 1833. There were then 28 voters in the town. The U. S. Government, through Colonel Beaubien, Gabriel Godefroy, Joseph Chaumier, P. B. Kercheval and Pierre Ménard, Jr., signed a treaty with the three Indian tribes, then owners of all the land, ceding to the federal government 5,000,000 acres. Colonel Beaubien organized the militia necessary to protect the surrounding country.

Beaubien and his brothers were, like many others of the French traders, careless and improvident. They all died poor. One of his sons is now a captain on the police force of Chicago, being about 80 years old.*

Noel Levasseur was born in Canada, Dec. 25, 1799. At seventeen years of age he started for the West, and became the agent of Jacob Astor at Iroquois, Ill. In 1837, with Francois Bourbonnais, he founded the town of Bourbonnais, seventy miles from Chicago. He became very wealthy and was appointed Indian Agent. In the war of the Rebellion, though more than sixty years old, he organized a full company of brave young men, all of Canadian parentage, known as Co. D, 71st Ill. Reg. It showed so much bravery at Vicksburg that after that battle it was usually placed in the most perilous positions. Levasseur was recognized as one of the most fearless pioneers of the West. He died at eighty years of age.

The few whites who at the beginning of the last century travelled in Northern Missouri, near what is known as Black Snake River, at its junction with the Missouri, could see on a small hill a humble habitation, a veritable sentinel of civilization in the desert near the Black Snake Hills. It was occupied by Joseph Robidoux, agent of the St. Louis Fur Co. All alone among the ferocious savages of that neighborhood, he had the courage to live there, and through many kindnesses to them, won their confidence and affection. He

*Alexander Beaubien died April, 1907.

was then only twenty years old. He was born in St. Louis in 1783, where his father was an intimate friend of Pierre Laclède and Pierre Chouteau, the founders of St. Louis. Robidoux signed treaties with several tribes for land now comprising the Counties of Atchison, Andrew, Holt, Buchanan, Nodaway and Platte, all in Missouri. The first Legislature of Missouri met in his residence at St. Louis, corner Main and Myrtle Streets. The settlement he had made was known as Black Snake, but Robidoux gave it the name of his patron saint, and it is now the city of St. Joseph, Mo. Robidoux died at eighty-four.

His brother Antoine, at twenty-two, accompanied Gen. Atchison to what was called the region of the *Roche Jaune*, (yellow stone) that had been previously explored by French Canadians. In 1845 he made another exploration to the Rocky Mountains, and the following year guided General Kearney in his campaign against Mexico. He died at St. Joseph at seventy years of age.

Francois Bogy left Canada in 1683, having been assigned to the commandship of St. Louis, in place of the celebrated LaSalle. Jos. Bougy, one of his kinsmen, established Bogy's Depot, situated in the country of the Choctaws and later became one of the Secretaries of Morales, Governor-General of Louisiana, which in 1763 comprised all the territory west of the Mississippi. Shortly after the acquisition of Louisiana by the United States, Pres. Jefferson selected nine French and Canadian boys to be sent to West Point Military Academy. One of Jos. Bogy's sons was among this number. Later he served several years in the Legislature of Missouri. Another one of his sons, Louis Vital Bogy, was born in 1813 in St. Genevieve, Mo. Schools and colleges were scarce in that part of the country. In 1826 he went with one of his brothers to a private school, but later met with a serious accident that crippled him for two years. During that period he read every book that he could reach, thereby acquiring a great deal of precious knowledge. In 1830, although still walking

with crutches, he spent 10 months at the Catholic College in Perry County. He clerked in a general store two years; then at the age of nineteen years, wrote his mother as follows:

“Jan. 16, 1832.

“I leave to-day under the care of my father’s old friend, Wm. Shannon, to go and study law in the office of Judge Pope of Kaskaskia. My education is very limited, but I will make up by hard work. I have decided this undertaking with the intention of returning to my native state to practice law, if I am admitted to the bar. I shall attempt, at the same time, to prepare myself to become a U. S. Senator for my state; should I accomplish that end only at sixty years of age, I pray God to give me the necessary perseverance.”

This document is extraordinary. It explains fully the later conduct of this ambitious young man of nineteen years. Of him, as of the celebrated Pitt, it could be said, “He never was a boy.” For forty years he worked incessantly, with that end in mind. Difficulties and obstacles were plenty, but he never hesitated. With the force of character that he was possessed of, by dint of energy, perseverance and the conscientious fulfilment of duty, he realized the prophetic note he had written his mother, as he was made Senator before he was 60 years old. He taught school to earn money for college. He fought Black Hawk in 1832 side by side with Abe Lincoln, then serving as a private. He was aristocratic, dignified; his integrity brought him a large practice as a young lawyer in St. Louis. At the age of twenty-seven he went to the Legislature. After practicing law fourteen years, he had accumulated a fortune. In 1866 he was appointed Indian Commissioner, and caused the Indian tribes in many sections to “bury the ax.” In Missouri politics he was a contemporary with Benton. In 1873 he was elected to the U. S. Senate three months before he attained his 60th year. He died in 1877.

In 1871 there died in Kansas City, Kansas, a man named Jacques Fournier, who was living on a farm near Quebec when Wolfe and Montcalm each found a hero’s grave at the

battle of the Plains of Abraham, Sept. 14, 1759. He fought under the Stars and Stripes in the War of 1812. He had previously served as guide to Lewis and Clarke in the exploration of Oregon. Lewis declared in his report to Congress that without Fournier and his Canadian companions he could never have returned. He was about 120 years old at his death.

Michel Brindamour Menard was a member of the convention that declared the independence of Texas, after its war with Mexico, in 1846. He bought for \$30,000 a large tract of land from the first Congress of that Republic and founded the city of Galveston, Texas. He became a member of that Congress and to his business capacity was greatly due the financial credit of that country. He died in 1856.

In December, 1824 in Maskinonge, Canada, Francois Xavier Aubrey was born. At the age of nineteen he emigrated to St. Louis to earn money to help his aged parents, and shortly after went to Mexico. Having become acquainted with the country and the advantages it offered for trading, he organized a caravan and started for Santa Fe, New Mexico, with \$6,000 worth of merchandise. This he sold, realizing more than \$6,000 profit. He went again with \$40,000 worth of merchandise. In 1848 during the war with Mexico, Major L. C. Easton, Quarter-Master of Fort Union, New Mexico, having a very important message to communicate to the American authorities, offered Aubrey \$1,000 if he would deliver it to the nearest post 800 miles away, at Independence, Mo., in seven days. He started alone on horseback through that Indian infested country, and travelled day and night to his destination in 5 days 16 hours. He became well acquainted with Gen. Wm. T. Sherman, then a Captain in the Army. Gen. John C. Fremont often speaks of him in his memoirs. He became wealthy and organized the most important caravans that ever travelled from St. Louis to Mexico. He was a man of great moral courage, one who would not suffer delay when action was imperative. On

one occasion his caravan consisting of 1,200 mules and 400 men was stranded by a terrible snowstorm, 150 miles from Santa Fe. Food was lacking for men and beasts. He rode to the city, arriving in the dead of night. He called on the Governor, whom the porter refused to call from his bed. Aubrey threatened him, revolver in hand. The Governor came, heard his story and said he could not act. Aubrey told him he must, saying, "Governor, 400 men will die, if you do not act. Your soldiers are ready; you have wagons; you must give orders at *once*, so they can start before sunrise"; then with a threatening voice, said "give your orders sir, at once." The Governor knew it would not be safe to refuse; the orders were given, and the caravan saved. In the geographical history of the West his name is linked with those of Marquette, LaSalle, Lewis, Clarke and Fremont. He died in Santa Fe, aged only 32 years, the victim of an assassin.

Ant. Leroux was at the beginning of the last century a rancher in New Mexico. He was a man of education, who kept a journal of his travels. Sept. 1, 1851, he guided the first expedition to trace the route of the Pacific R. R. He guided John Russell Bartlett, U. S. Com., to trace the geographical lines between this country and Mexico. He explored California with Colonel Cook's expedition in 1846 and 1847, and Utah with Captain Gunnison. He rendered very important services to the U. S. Corps of Surveyors from the Mississippi to the Pacific coast. He died old, leaving as an estate only his gun and the reputation of a good and fearless man.

Prudent Beaudry in 1852 located at Los Angeles, California. He contributed more than any other man in making the beautiful city of Southern California what it is. He established at his own expense the water works. He gave the first public park. He became Mayor of the city. His brother, Victor, settled in Nicaragua, in 1850, and in 1861 was appointed Quarter-Master of the troops coming from the Pacific Coast to take part in the Rebellion, and remained

during the war with the Army of the Potomac. He discovered the process of melting gold and silver ore instead of roasting it.

Gabriel Franchère's exploits have been immortalized by Washington Irving. He was a man of good education. In the dispute between England and the United States relative to the dividing line between British Columbia and Oregon, his journal and surveys were used to advantage in the Senate of the United States. He went to Washington, where he conferred with Thomas H. Benton, Webster and Clay in the settlement of these difficulties. He was born in Montreal in 1786. He died at St. Paul, Minn., in 1863, having explored the country from Missouri to Vancouver.

I have spoken of the West, but on looking at the map of Vermont enough will be found to indicate that French Canadians had something to do in its settlement. Vermont is French, for Green Mountain, Lamoille and Orleans, Counties, Montpelier, the capital, St. Albans, Vergennes, are all French names, while New York State has its Chautauguay, Au Sable, St. Regis, Roquette, Champlain, and scores of others.

Chateaubriand said, "Of all the Europeans, the French are the friendliest to the Indians because of their cheerfulness, their brilliant valor, and their natural inclination for hunting and rigorous living, as though the greatest civilization was nearer to genuine nature." This assertion of the celebrated writer is fully corroborated by the preceding sketches of the lives of many of our travellers.

Parkman, who, more than any other man, knew and wrote the history of the French Canadians, said, "A rightful heir to French bravery and French restlessness, he had an eager love of wandering and adventure. Buoyant and gay like his ancestry of France, he lived happy in the midst of poverty."

For long years the only geographers of the great West were these Canadian traders, trappers, bushrangers, and scouts, whose adventurous existence has been depicted with so much charm by Fenimore Cooper in the following words: ["He exhibited through the mask of his rude and nearly

savage equipments, though sunburnt and long-faded complexion of one who might claim descent from a European parentage. His frame was like that of one who had known hardships and exertion from earliest youth. His person, though muscular, was rather attenuated than full; but every nerve and muscle appeared strung and indurated by unremitting toil and exposure. His eye was small, quick, keen and restless, as though distrusting the sudden approach of some lurking enemy. Notwithstanding these symptoms of habitual suspicion, his countenance was not only without guile, but at the moment he was introduced, it was charged with an expression of sturdy honesty."] It is a mistaken idea that these men were coarse and uncivilized. Being daily accustomed to danger, they of necessity had to depend on themselves. Their activity had no intermission. Constant communication with nature that has preserved the mysterious grandeur and charm of solitude, has a tendency to ennoble the most vulgarly inclined.

You hear a great deal about the part the French took in the war of the Revolution, Lafayette, Rochambault, and other great names. You never hear that the French Canadians took any part, but they did. Franklin, Carroll and Chase went to Canada, and whole regiments of volunteers were organized. Rev. Father La Valnière was such an ardent supporter of the Revolution that he was compelled to leave Canada and cross over into New York State. Under the direction of Rev. Fr. Gibault and Colonel Vigo, the Canadians in New York, Indiana and Illinois rendered very valuable services to the Colonies in protecting the northern boundary at that critical period, and the Continental Congress recognized those services by land grants in Clinton County, N. Y.

Forty thousand French Canadians fought in the War of the Rebellion. As Washington in the war for independence found patriots, friends and soldiers among them, so did Lincoln in the great war for the perpetuation of free government and equal rights for all, find friends and patriots who had

emigrated from the country north of us. There are no monuments to perpetuate their memory for the noble deeds achieved and heroic duty done. Hundreds—yes, thousands—are mustered in the elysian fields beyond the stars. Their record is made, their fame secure, their life work done.

“On fame’s eternal camping ground
Their silent tents are spread,
And glory guards with solemn round
The bivouac of the dead.”

Remarks were participated in by President Maynard, Crane and Mr. Charles R. Daoust, editor of “L’Opinion Publique.”

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND TWENTY-FIFTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, APRIL 2, 1907.

THE meeting was held at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present were, Messrs. Arnold, Baldwin, Burleigh, Bachelor, Crane, Coffin, Davidson, Eaton, Gasset, George Maynard, Newton, Miss M. L. T. Cogswell, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Manly, Miss Sawyer, Miss Smith, Miss Grover and others.

The Librarian reported additions since the last meeting; six bound volumes, twenty-nine pamphlets, and twenty-four articles for the Museum. Attention was called to the donation from James D. Tyler, of South Berlin, consisting of nine pieces of Continental money in denominations from one to eight dollars and the forty-two shilling piece. President Maynard presented the Society with the History of the Jewish Coinage by Frederick W. Madden. And from the Connecticut Historical Society a medal in commemoration of the fiftieth anniversary of the death of Thomas Robbins D. D., Librarian and Benefactor.

The Committee on Nomination presented the names of the following persons and they were elected to membership in this Society: George F. Brooks, Emma Susan Barrett, William Clarkson Breed, James E. Boardman, Arthur B. Chapin, Frederick A. Hawes, L. B. Holt, George H. Keyes, Henry R. Leathers, Jeanette A. W. Ramsay, Charles E. Squier, Aaron A. White, Roger Freeman Upham.

The paper announced for the evening was then read.

WHAT OUR NEW ENGLAND FOREFATHERS HAD TO READ.

BY ELLERY BICKNELL CRANE.

In contrasting the advantages for reading, at the present time, with that of one hundred and fifty, to two hundred and

fifty years ago, we find the difference so marked, that we are led to revere more than ever before, the wise and manly traits displayed by the founders of this Republic, and are at once reminded that the printers' art and occupation, has developed equally as rapidly, and traveled abreast of all the various instrumentalities that have been used to promote the civilization of the world, and advance the standard of culture in the way of correcting and improving the educational conditions of the entire human race.

For nearly one hundred years after the Pilgrims settled upon these shores there was scarcely a page printed in the country chronicling events of the time.

The limited number of books to be found throughout the Colonies were brought from across the Atlantic, and held in the possession of Ministers, Officials of the Government or a few educated men residing within the Colonies. As might be inferred, these books in the main, if not wholly, constituted treatise on the subjects of law and theology. The Bible and the Catechism furnished good wholesome reading at the family home, and with the exception of the witchcraft excitement, the banishment of some recalcitrant minister or resolute brother and sister from the church, there was no great excitement to attract the attention of the inhabitants of the Colonies from their daily rounds.

So very scarce were books, and also the money with which to buy them, that the practice of *reading*, was greatly neglected. As a large proportion of the early comers to New England sought these shores that they might exercise their thoughts with more freedom upon the subject of religion, it was natural that their minds should run along those channels, and perhaps absorb for a considerable time their chief thought, and when the printing press was started in Boston it began turning out works on subjects in which the people were vitally interested.

Among them were, *The Whole Concern of Man*, or what he ought to know, and do, by John Edwards, D.D., printed

in Boston by S. Kneeland in 1725; *The Doctrine of Predestination unto Life*, by William Cooper, printed in Boston by J. Draper in 1740, also by Mr. Draper, *The Doctrine of the Law and Grace Unfolded*, etc., by John Bunyon, author of *Pilgrim's Progress*, in 1742; *The Marrow of Modern Divinity Touching The Covenant of Works and The Covenant of Grace*, by E. Fisher, printed in Boston by Green, Bushnell & Allen, in 1743; *An Humble Attempt to promote Explicit Agreement and Visible Union of God's people in Extraordinary Prayer, For the Revival of Religion and the Advancement of Christ's Kingdom on Earth, pursuant to Scripture-Promises and Prophecies concerning the last Time*, by Jonathan Edwards, A. M., minister of the Gospel at Northampton, printed by Daniel Henchman in Boston, in 1747. Mr. Edwards was a prolific writer, for his time. In January 1858, he was elected president of what is now Princeton College, to succeed his son-in-law, Aaron Burr, and died on the 22d day of March following. It was his grandson, Aaron Burr, Jr., who was the politician that became Vice-President under Jefferson and killed Hamilton in a duel in July, 1804.

The titles above have been given as representing the class of reading to which the colonists were chiefly introduced; but the books from across the water were of similar kind: John Cotton's writings, with the Mathers', John Milton's *Paradise Lost*, Richard Baxter's works, John Foxe's *Book of Martyrs* and other writers. But it is hardly necessary to multiply illustrations, *one*, however, should not be omitted; that is Isaac Watts' *Hymns*, and his *Psalm Book*. Perhaps next to the Bible, no books were more appreciated in the home circle than the Hymn and Psalm books of Isaac Watts'. The first edition appeared in 1707, the first version of *Psalms* on a new plan, came out in 1719. Many editions followed; the twenty-first in 1758, and the twenty-third, in 1761. We have in our library the first Worcester edition of the psalms of David by Isaac Watts, printed by Isaiah Thomas in 1785, also another copy printed in 1791. Although the dissemina-

tion of information regarding events may have had its origin prior to the art of printing, when news was circulated in manuscript form, on sheets of paper, it perhaps was not general in its scope, and did not reach the masses. The Chinese, who were the earliest printers, issued the first newspaper printed. It was in the form of an Official Gazette, giving the political news, government changes, series of events and items of general public interest, and was continued for centuries.

The Germans are said to have been the first in Europe to issue a News sheet, in the year 1563; their first issue in numbered sheets appeared in 1612. The first French paper was published in 1632. The first regularly published English newspaper appeared in London issued by Nathaniel Butter in 1622, a small weekly quarto of eighteen pages. It was called "Certain News of the Present Week."

In the year 1690 the Governor of New York caused a reprint of the London *Gazette* to be made, doubtless out of compliment to the Mother Country. It was the first imitation of a newspaper printed within the territory now the United States.

But the spirit of absolute control over the acts of the colonists in America was made apparent when the British Government issued instructions to prohibit future issues of a small four page sheet, one of which was blank, published in Boston by Benjamin Harris, on the 25th of September, 1690. This seems to have been the first attempt at a newspaper in New England, for it gave an account of passing occurrences, foreign and domestic. The authorities charged that the issue contained reflections of a grave nature, and nothing whatever could be printed without a license having been previously obtained. Newspapers during the next dozen or fourteen years grew into better favor, evidently from the fact that when the postmaster of Boston, John Campbell, issued the *Boston News-Letter*, April 24, 1704, no interference occurred.

This first *Monday morning number of the Boston News-Letter* was printed on a half-sheet of paper eight by twelve inches in size, made up in two pages, with two columns on each page. For fifteen years it was continued in that form, and then somewhat enlarged. The *Boston Gazette* was started in 1719, by William Brooker, who succeeded Campbell as postmaster. But it remained for James, the brother of our famous Benjamin Franklin, to inaugurate in 1721 a sample of live journalism for New England, and it was in the printing room of this primitive journal, *The New England Current*, that the then little, but later, *great* Franklin, began his career. So much real spice was worked into the columns of this paper (it is claimed through the assistance of Benjamin who was at that time simply experimenting with the English language) that James, the proprietor, was forbidden to continue his publication. Nevertheless it *was* continued for a time by shifting it over to the name of the unsuspected young prodigy, Benjamin, who after various experiences, established in Philadelphia the *Pennsylvania Gazette*, in the year 1729, and which, it is perhaps unnecessary to add, became popular reading within its circulating district.

The publication styled the *Magazine*, of which we have almost an endless variety at the present time, was first attempted in England in the year 1730, in the "*Memoirs of the Society of Grub-Street*;" it was a captious sort of a publication, given to ridicule or satire. The following year Edward Cave began the *Gentleman's Magazine*, which soon became popular and has been issued more than a century. In 1732, came the *London Magazine*; Scott's in 1739; and three others in 1761.

In the United States we must turn back to Benjamin Franklin as the author and publisher of the first magazine. It was styled "*The General Magazine and Historical Chronicle for all the British Plantations in America*." It appeared for January 1741, and was to be issued monthly. Andrew Bradford issued a rival to that of Franklin's the same year,

but it failed to reach its third number. In 1743, came the "American Magazine and Historical Chronicle." It was started in Boston, and continued little more than three years. Another trial was made in Philadelphia when the "Philadelphia American Magazine or Monthly Chronicle for the British Colonies" appeared in 1757; one volume was the extent of the effort. Then Lewis Nichola tried his hand on "The American Magazine" in 1769; although a popular title, it survived only a few months. And the same fate was in store for the "Royal Spiritual Magazine or Christian's Grand Treasury," started in 1771. Among the numerous attempts made to place an American Magazine on substantial footing, from the year 1769 to 1775, but one was successful: the "Pennsylvania Magazine or American Monthly Museum", printed and sold in Philadelphia by R. Aitken. Attempts were made in both Boston and New York to secure support for magazines, all proving of little avail.

In pursuing our subject further let us glance at the libraries of the period under consideration; the word library was rather a rare term, and one seldom used by our forefathers. If they had any clear conception of what it meant, it was understood to cover a small collection of books stored in the home of their minister, or perhaps the home of some learned deacon of the church. So far as their knowledge extended, the most dignified or ennobling application to be given the term *library* was to apply it to the books held by some College or Educational Institution. No real conception of libraries such as the country is supplied with at the present time, could have been held by those early New England settlers.

To show that the authorities at Boston were thoroughly mindful of their subjects, and that they should have only such books to read as were proper, August 22, 1654, it was ordered, that any person having books lately brought from England under the names of John Reeves and Lodovicke Mugleton, who pretend themselves to be the two last witnesses and prophets of Jesus Christ, which are full of blasphemy,

and shall not send or hand all such books in their custody, to the next Magistrate, shall forfeit the sum of ten pounds for every such book found or known to be in the hands of any inhabitant. October 18, 1654, the Court ordered all such books as are or shall be in custody, to be burned in the Market Place at Boston by the Executioner on the next lecture day, after the lecture.

October 14, 1656, it was ordered that any person knowingly importing into any harbor of this Jurisdiction, any Quaker books or writings concerning their "devilish" opinions shall pay for every such book or writing, if proved against them, five pounds. If they attempt to conceal such books or writings, and found out, shall pay five pounds. Comparatively little has been found in the public records about the books of those early days, and in order to form some estimate of the number to be found in the various family homes, we learn by examining the inventories of losses caused by the great fire of 1760, in Boston, that about one family in six lost from one to forty books. Twenty-three families, out of one hundred and forty, had on the average about eighteen books. And this was one hundred and twenty-five or more years after the settlement of Boston. Horace E. Scudder, Esq., in his interesting article on "Public Libraries a Hundred Years Ago," published in the November number of the *Century* in 1881, (from which many items of information have been gleaned for this paper) there refers to a public library that had an existence in Boston in 1673, but fails to give its origin. As this may have been the first public town library established in the American Colonies, an effort has been made to present its early history.

Captain Robert Keayne, who was the first commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, and by occupation a tailor, was the first to build on, and occupy, the southwestern corner of King, now State Street, where he had his shop or store. He was very successful in his business, and accumulated a large amount of property.

In the latter part of his life he felt very much annoyed by various reports, that he had charged exorbitant prices for his goods; the matter even went to the courts, and like some millionaires of the present day, wishing to show his willingness to make amends for the real or fancied advantage taken of his customers, made certain gifts in the form of legacies by his will dated December 28, 1653. Among other bequests he gives £120, for the founding of an Almshouse for the poor of Boston; £100, for a Granary, and £300, for a market or Townhouse in which there shall be made a convenient room for a *Library*, at the same time bequeathing four great writing books, which are intended as an exposition or interpretation of the whole Bible; and also of the prophecy of Daniel, etc., together with such other books from his collection as might be thought desirable or needful. The writing-books referred to were in his own handwriting, and complete, excepting the fourth volume (The Prophecy of Daniel). That, he hoped some one would take up and complete. He died November, 1654. As the conditions in the will required the completion of the building within two or three years from the Captain's decease, it is fair to suppose that at the close of the year 1657, the building was ready for occupancy. And Boston was supplied with a Public Library. Not with a large collection of books, but with a fair start for the time. To this nucleus left by Captain Keayne, contributions were added by Governors Endicott, Bellingham, and others. Also *books* were contributed to this, *the Town's Library*.

This building called the Town-House, was a wooden structure and stood on the site of the present Old State House, at the head of State Street. June 24, 1661, Richard Taylor was given the use of a shop under the Town-House. Demand was made December 30, 1661, for £60, from the legacy left by Captain Keayne, April 28, 1662; the watch was ordered to see that no one take tobacco or use any fire under or about the Town-House. July 25, 1664, it was ordered that every working day the bell shall be rung at eleven of the clock, to

give notice to all persons concerned, that commonly resort there, that they assemble in the room under the Town-House for the space of one hour, for the expeditious despatch of merchants' affairs or any other, or any other relating to strangers and our inhabitants. These quotations are made from the records of Boston to show that the legacy, and of course the obligations were accepted by the Town. But it appears also from the records that the final payment on account of the legacies from the estate of the Captain was not acknowledged by the Town until March 7, 1671.

August 31, 1702, the selectmen of Boston ordered that John Barnard, Jr., make a catalogue of the books belonging to the town's library and lodge the same in said library. February 28, 1704, Mr. Barnard having set the library in good order, is allowed *two books*, of which there are in the library two of a sort.

The Town-House was burned in 1711, and rebuilt the following year, and June 2, 1713, notice was given that all persons having any of the Town's Library, any books or other thing, that belonged to the Town before the late fire, to return them. "That L. Cursus Mathematicus be delivered to Mr. Miles, said book belonged to the Church Library." The will of Captain Keayne, which has been referred to, is a lengthy document, covering fifty-three closely printed pages, a copy of which may be found in the tenth volume of the Record Commissioners' report for the city of Boston, published in 1886.

This Library-Room was designed to be a long room where Divines and Scholars, as well as other people could meet, and confer together. The second Town House, which was built of brick, was burned in 1747; at this time, a vast number of ancient books and early records, with valuable papers, are said to have been destroyed.

The Town House was rebuilt in 1748, making the third one, and stands to-day one of the most interesting landmarks of Colonial times. Perhaps no other building in Boston

possesses so many attractions for the historian as the Old State House at the corner of State and Washington Streets. It stands upon the site where the first Town House was erected, about 1657, which housed the first Public Town Library and Reading Room to gain permanency in the American Colonies. Here in that wooden building, was established the first Merchants' Exchange in Boston; the present building was used by the Colonial Courts, the General Court of the Colony, and also of the State. Here the Commissions of the Royal Governors were read in the presence of the Court; the news of the death of George II and ascension of George III was read from the balcony.

The stamped clearances were burned in front of the Town House in 1766, to show the disgust felt by the Colonists on account of the Stamp Act. Within the shadow of this historic building occurred the Boston Massacre; here British Troops were housed in 1768. In the west chamber of this building were originated, it is said, the most important measures which led to the emancipation of the Colonies; there American Independence was born.

Council of war was held here by Gage, Howe and Clinton.

On the 18th of July 1776, the Declaration of Independence was read from the east balcony. Here in 1778, Count D'Estaing was received by Governor Hancock, in the Council Chamber.

Here the Convention met to ratify the Constitution of the United States before adjourning to Federal Street Church.

After the Revolution, the Legislature met here until 1798. Here the Constitution of Massachusetts was planned.

Here upon a temporary balcony at the west end of the building Washington in October, 1789, received the homage of the people; and the west end of this building was at one time occupied as a Post Office.—Prior to the war of the Revolution there were perhaps three or four libraries that might be called public or subscription libraries to be found within the confines of Massachusetts, where an exceedingly

small proportion of the population of the Colony were allowed access to a meagre assortment of books, probably not over 1,000 volumes, chiefly on the subjects of Divinity, Church Government, or some work on religious knowledge, a little history, and a trifle of mathematics. Prior to the year 1800, there were nineteen college libraries in existence, Harvard being the earliest established, ten of them founded subsequent to the Revolutionary War. But the common people received little or no help from these sources, except what came to them through the teachings of scholars sent out from these institutions.

Nine *school libraries* were established between 1749 and the year 1800. Six medical libraries, the earliest being at the Pennsylvania Hospital in 1763, while the Worcester District Medical Library brought up the rear in 1798. There were four church libraries, the earliest was Christ Church Library in Philadelphia, Penn., 1695, and the last one prior to the year 1800, was Groton First Parish Library 1793, this being in Worcester County. Prior to 1800, there was one Masonic library (Grand Lodge of Pennsylvania).

In this enumeration you must see that the school, college, and professional class of libraries, gave little accommodation to the masses. Possibly the list of readers in the latter class was *not large*, but the advantages for enlarging it were not of a very encouraging nature.

It may be admitted that the professional class, ministers, magistrates, lawyers, doctors, were fairly well supplied with textbooks for their time. But the guardians of the public treasury seemed less mindful of the needs of the yeomanry of the land, excepting to prevent their reading anything that might tend to awaken heresy in their minds, or turn them a hair's breadth from absolute submission to the dictation of their superiors in office.

As has been intimated, the general public during those Colonial days were confined for their reading matter, to their collections at their several homes, or to the few institutions

which may be classed as Public, or Subscription Libraries. The Boston Town Library has been mentioned and stands on the list first in time of organization; the others of which we have record were the (Revolving Library, Kittery, Me., Instituted in 1751,) (Social Library, Salem, 1760,) (Social Library, Leominster, 1763,) (Portland, Me., Subscription Library, 1763,) (Social Library, Hingham, 1773, supported by shareholders,) (American Academy Arts and Sciences, Boston, 1780,) (Hanover, N. H., Society Library, 1783,) (Juvenile and Social Library, Dublin, N. H., 1793,) (Enfield, N. H. Family Library, 1793,) (Hollis, N. H. Social Library, 1799,) (Franklin Library, 1786, in Franklin, Mass. Benjamin Franklin was a contributor of books to this library). (Next in order came the First Congregational Church Library, at Falmouth, a Social library and free, also instituted in 1786.) (Massachusetts Historical Library, 1791,) (Boylston Center, Social Library, 1792,) (Boston Library Society, 1794,) (Rowe Town Library, 1797,) and the Westford Town Library also in 1797).

Prior to the year 1800, Massachusetts had but twelve libraries, large and small. In 1876, she had four hundred and fifty-nine, and to-day no doubt has upwards of five hundred. The contrast in variety and volume of reading matter, must be far greater even, than in the number of libraries.

Having disposed of the larger, or public sources, what can we say for the home libraries or collections of reading matter in the homes of those early people, omitting the professional classes? On information given in the *inventories of loss sustained by 140 families through the great fire in Boston*, in 1760, (which has already been referred to) the conclusion is reached that from one to two dozen books was the extent of the average household-library. And not all families were supplied with even a half-dozen volumes. The title pages of those books told the reader of the importance and gravity of the subjects treated within. There were no magazines,

and the newspaper was almost unknown. School books were very scarce, although after the close of the Revolutionary War they appeared more plentiful. Among the early ones of which we have copies in our library, were, (Cocker's arithmetic, printed in 1697,) (Grammar, by John Brightland, London, 1714. This book was the property of Daniel Torrey of Boston, in 1756.) (Park's Astrology, 1723,) (A New Guide To The English Tongue, In Five Parts, Used In Great Britain, Ireland, And Several English Colonies, published in 1740, and 1761. Thomas Dilworth was the author. One copy we have, was the property of Anna Smalley, who wrote these encouraging words on the inside cover: "Anna Smalley is my name And single is my station And happy be the little man Who makes the alteration.") These books contained instruction in reading, spelling, and grammar, also a list of prayers to be used in schools and other places. Each edition has twelve woodcut illustrations, representing as many fables. The same gentleman published an Arithmetic in 1743. (The Young Mathematician's Guide Plain and Easy Introduction To The Mathematics, By John Ward, 1758. This work included Arithmetic, Algebra, Geometry and Trigonometry.) Among the early school books printed in the American Colonies we have the American Latin Grammar, by Robert Ross, printed in New York in the year 1770; The Pennsylvania Spelling Book, Compiled by Anthony Benezet, printed in Providence, R. I., 1782; A Grammatical Institute, of the English Language, etc.; Noah Webster's Spelling Book, printed in Hartford, Ct., 1783. (The Only Sure Guide to the English Tongue or New Pronouncing Spelling Book, by W. Perry, printed at Worcester, Mass., by Isaiah Thomas, 1785. This was the first Worcester edition.) (We have a copy of the Perry Spelling Book printed in Edinburgh, 1776.) Caleb Alexander's Grammar, printed in Boston 1792; Pike's Arithmetic, printed in Newburyport 1788; The Art of Speaking, printed for Ebenezer Larkin, Boston 1793; George Dwight's Geography, Hartford 1795.

In 1794, Isaiah Thomas and D. Carlisle printed in Walpole, N. H., *The Instructor or American Young Man's best Companion*, containing Spelling, Reading, writing, and Arithmetic, in an easier way than any yet published, and how to qualify any person for business, without the help of a master. It also told how to make Pickles Preserves, wine and Medicines for family use, by George Fisher 1794. While in some respects the opportunities granted our forefathers might appear to us to have been limited or perhaps unfortunate, they certainly were extremely fortunate in escaping a certain class of reading matter so common at the present day, that the evil influences are plainly felt and deplored by the great bulk of society.

From the numerous citations given, it must be apparent that the sober side of life was held constantly in view; humility, veneration, devotion, were the words ever upon their lips, whether addressed either to Church or State, for *they* were one and inseparable. What was needful to equip them for that service, they felt they had. All else to them, was secondary.

For matters of general information and of local interest, that which had to do with their every day life, was to be found in a little Pamphlet known as the Almanac. Upon the pages of that publication they could find beside an orderly series of Months, Weeks and Days, an exhibit of the true places of the Sun and Moon, their rising, setting and eclipses, changing of the seasons, description of the great Highways and roads of the Country, with distances between the settlements along those highways, Sessions of the Courts throughout the Colonies, also of the Fairs, as well as the general meetings of the various religious denominations, etc. The people of those days were not expecting to read of events before they happened, they were content to learn of them after they occurred.

In gleaning for the origin of the Almanac, find that the first to appear in this class of publications was the Calendar, an

orderly arrangement of the divisions of time, as days, weeks months, etc., adapted to the purposes of civil life, and also to indicate certain days to be observed by the church. They were first issued in manuscript form; copies are in existence issued as early as the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries.

The Almanac, which is more than a mere calendar, came into use quite early, but the first said to be worthy of notice was printed in the year 1457. From that time forward they were issued more frequently until they became of common use.

Early in the sixteenth century, compilers or publishers of them attempted to calculate and foretell certain political and personal events and were so successful in their prognostications that Henry III of France in 1579, issued a notice prohibiting the stating of predictions relating to political or public events.

During the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, Almanacs were used as a medium by which to distribute sentiments of the political parties of the times. In 1636, Matthieu Laensbergh, it is said, published an almanac for the use of the uneducated, in which special symbols were used. A rude cut of a vial announced the phase of the moon under which a dose of medicine should be taken, a pill box to denote the planet most propitious for pills, a pair of scissors to tell time for cutting the hair, a lancet for blood letting.

In England the Crown gave two Universities and the Stationers-Company a monopoly of the trade in Almanacs, and the *Moor's*, also the *Poor Robin's* Almanac became very popular. John Partridge was employed as prophet for the Stationers-Company, and Swift wrote under the name of Isaac Bickerstaff, as early as 1768, and possibly earlier. Some of these publications found their way to the American Colonies. There is a copy of the Bickerstaff Almanac for the year 1768, with forty-two pages, which according to close estimate, contains as much reading matter as ninety pages of this Society's proceedings. It was calculated for the

meridian of Boston, and New England. Twelve pages are given for the calendar, four to the various roads; the remaining pages contain, A general review of the world, Produce, Revenue, Strength, Religion, etc.; An Address to the public; A Chronological Table of the Discovery of the arts and sciences, interspersed with remarkable events; A copy of the Declaration of Rights, or new magna Charta, of February 13, 1688; Extract of an Act of Parliament for granting a bounty on lumber imported into Great Britain from America and the prices they generally sell at. This bounty was to extend nine years from January 1766. Table of rates of postage on letters in America; An article on the most usual causes of popular diseases, and of the danger of the common methods that are taken before a physician is called in. And under date of October 19, 1767, Proposals for printing a new weekly paper, called *The Boston Chronicle*. The attempt has not been made to give a complete list of the subjects treated in this little pamphlet; it must, however, readily be seen from what has been presented, that it furnished the common people or the general reader, what they or he ought to know, it gave the useful, practical information of the time. But this was only one of a class of similar publications issued under the title, *Almanac*.

Some authors were inclined to display their literary power in special effusions of wit and sarcasm. On the second page, Nathaniel Ames in his *Almanac* for the year 1742, says, "Reader, I think it would be a scandal to an Almanack-Maker, wholly to pass by in silence the great conjunction of Saturn and Jupiter, which happens this year on the twenty-third of August in 27 Deg., 55 Min., and 24 Seconds of the sign Leo; There neither has been, neither will there be another conjunction of these Planets in this regal sign this Century; Great things may therefore be expected from the greatest persons on the earth, strange motions of a religious nature, and as it is in Romes Sign it may affect his Holiness himself;

As to New England, I say not; but would caution my countrymen as follows, viz.:

———You've heard the doleful story
Of the half-d—nd Place call'd Purgatory
Where guilty souls must stay
Till living Saints by Prayers have purg'd their Crimes away
New-England Men beware
If once the D——I should catch you there
You'd not get out again
But stay you must
Forever curst
For want of money's a mortal Sin.

Nathaniel Ames was of Dedham, and began publishing his Almanac in 1724. He was given somewhat, to what he called poetry, also a little history. In that of 1756, in giving an account of the several North American Provinces, and in describing Massachusetts Bay, adds, that Boston is the Metropolis of North America; The air clear and healthy; the soil in some parts very good, producing Rice, Oats, Barley and Indian Corn, in great plenty, excellent Pasture Land and plenty of Provisions. Our Cod-Fish we trade off to Spain, Portugal, Italy &c. Our Whale-Fishery and Ship Building is great &c &c &c. The number of our inhabitants is computed at 220,000, Our Governor is his Excellency William Shirley, Esq. In 1759, the price for single copies of the Ames Almanac was five coppers, but the next year it was fixed at seven coppers. Chapters on caring for the house, the farm, the sick, in fact about every practical subject may be found treated within the covers of these little publications.

Dr. Nathaniel Ames died July 11, 1764, and his son Nathaniel, then twenty-four years of age, took up the work, and in his preface for the issue for 1765, referring to former publications, says, "I have been very anxious to have it become as useful as possible, to those whose oracle is an Almanac, such as are destitute of any other periodical performance, as Magazines, or the like, or even Newspapers." These few lines from young Ames describe clearly the place in the literary world covered by the Almanac, at that time.

Benjamin Franklin commenced in 1732 to publish an

Almanac representing it to be by Richard Saunders, it was called Poor Richard's Almanac, a name perhaps suggested by that of Poor Robins, reference to which has previously been made. In this publication Franklin gained popularity by furnishing his readers with much useful and practical information, at the same time presenting it in such an attractive form as to create among the people a demand for his writings. William Bradford, the first printer in Philadelphia who printed the first American Almanac, removed to New York in 1693, where in 1725 he issued the *New York Gazette*, first newspaper published in that place. His son, Andrew Bradford in Philadelphia, printed and sold an Almanac, by Jacob Taylor, of which we have several copies, earliest being for 1737. He also issued the American Almanac by Titan Leeds, copy for 1738, is in our collection. Bradford died in 1742. I. Warner and C. Bradford continued the publication, by Jacob Taylor.

There were a number of different authors or compilers who through the assistance of their printers, placed their product before the public. Fictitious names were sometimes used in the place of that of the real compiler. Nathaniel Low was a popular editor; was a resident of Berwick, and began about 1763, to issue his publication, which was continued for more than a half-century; printed in Boston.

Benjamin West, who was born in Rehoboth, Mass., 1730, and died in Providence, R. I., August 26, 1813, was a teacher, bookseller, manufacturer, professor of mathematics and astronomy, postmaster at Providence, and editor of Almanacs. John Anderson's, Newport, R. I., also that of Abraham Wetherwise, Boston, are interesting publications. Andrew Beers issued his product from Hartford, Ct. Edes and Gill's North American Almanac for 1770, of which we have a copy in the library, gives an account of the landing of the British Troops in 1768, with a view of Boston and the fleet in the harbor. The Society also has the picture given in the New England Almanac for the year 1776, "Boston cannon-

aded," by Edmund Freebetter, New London, Ct. Nehemiah Strong, born in Northampton, Mass., February 24, 1728-9, in 1770 accepted a professorship in Yale College, of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy, was a teacher, a minister, and an editor of Almanacs, which were printed in Hartford, Ct. Perhaps the most popular among the early publications were those by Nathaniel Ames, Benjamin Franklin, and Nathaniel Low.

The seeds sown by Franklin in Philadelphia, evidently brought forth fruit, for in that locality were to be found the most generous supporters of proposed periodicals. Here the Ladies' Magazine was established, the first of the class in the country, in 1799, and Gode's Lady's Book, in 1830. The first devoted to children, came out in Brooklyn, N. Y., in 1806, followed by Murry's Museum, Parley's Magazine; and others have followed until the people have become completely bewildered, and the country burdened by the super-abundance of periodical publications, which are chiefly supported by the advertisements they contain, rather than the literary articles they furnish.

But *Worcester*, also, has the distinction of having been a center for the publication of not only Almanacs, but various works, helpful in promoting and developing the educational, social and industrial life of the New England Colonies. The first year that Isaiah Thomas, the noted patriot and printer, established his printing-press in Worcester, and it was in that memorable year of 1775, he printed The North American's Almanac and Gentleman's and Lady's Diary for the year 1776, edited by Samuel Stearns, Student in Physick and Astronomy.

It was the first publication of the kind printed in Worcester. It was composed of twenty-six printed pages; among the subjects treated, was "A short History which sheweth how the Charters of the city of London, with other parts of Old England, and the British Colonies in New-England were taken away in the Reign of King Charles the II;" a list of the New

England Governors from the beginning of the English settlements to the surrender of the Charters.

An account of the commencement of hostilities between Great Britain and America, in the province of Massachusetts Bay by the Rev. Mr. William Gordon, of Roxbury, in a letter to a gentleman in England. As this account was printed in the summer or fall of 1775, it is no doubt an accurate presentation of the facts. On the last few pages may be found an article on preserving the health of the soldiers in the camps; also a description of the ancient Whigs and Tories. For captions, he used a verse of poetry to represent or illustrate the seasons. Let me quote from a copy in the Society's library, beginning with January.

1792.

- | | |
|-----------|--|
| January. | Lo! my fair, the morning lazy,
Peeps abroad from yonder hill;
Phœbus rises red and hazy,
Frost has stop'd the village mill. |
| February. | All around looks sad and dreary;
East the flakey snow descends;
Yet the redbreasts chirrup cheery,
While the nittened lass attends. |
| March. | Rise the winds, and rock the cottage,
Thaws the roof, and wets the path;
Doreas cooks the savory pottage;
Smokes the cake upon the hearth. |
| April. | Sunshine intermits with ardor,
Shades fly swiftly o'er the fields;
Showers revive the drooping verdure,
Sweets the sunny uplands yields. |
| May. | Pearly beams the eye of morning;
Child! forbear the deed unbles'd!
Hawthorn every hedge adorning,
Pluck the flower—but spare the nest! |
| June. | School-boys in the brooks disporting,
Spends the sultry hour of play;
While the nymphs and swains are courting;
Seated on the new made hay. |
| July. | Maids with each a guardian lover,
While the vivid lightning flies;
Hastening to the nearest cover,
Clasps their hands before their eyes. |

- August. See the reapers, gleaners, dining,
 Seated on the shady grass;
 O'er the gate the squire reclining,
 Wanton eyes each ruddy lass.
- September. Hark! a sound like distant thunder,
 Murderer, may thy malice fail!
 Torn from all they love asunder,
 Widow'd birds around us wail.
- October. Now Pomona pours her treasure,
 Leaves autumnal strew the ground;
 Plenty crowns the market measure,
 While the mill runs briskly round.
- November. Now the giddy rites of Comus,
 Crown the hunter's dear delight,
 Ah! the year is flitting from us,
 Bleak the day, and drear the night.
- December. Bring more wood, and set the glasses,
 Join, my friends, our Christmas cheer;
 Come, a song!—and kiss the lasses—
 Christmas comes but once a year.

Isaiah Thomas began the issue of his almanac in Worcester in 1779, and it is said that through an accident which occurred in setting the type for the next issue, his publication gained quite a reputation. One of the type-setters asked, "What shall be placed against the 13th of July?" Mr. Thomas in careless haste answered, "*Anything, anything.*" The boy put in, Rain, hail and Snow, and to the surprise of its readers, when the day came, the prediction was fulfilled. From that time forward, there was brisk sale for the Worcester Almanac.

Your attention has just been called to the Almanacs of Dr. Samuel Stearns. As this most remarkable yet perhaps eccentric man was born and reared almost within our midst, and received at the hands of Worcester men and their neighbors what we would now call inhuman treatment, let us consider briefly some of the tortures to which he was subjected, beginning the narrative, by quoting from his petition to the King of Great Britain:

To the king's most excellent majesty:—

The petition of Samuel Stearns most humbly represents that when the unhappy dissensions commenced between Great Britain and your majesty's American colonies, he was

an inhabitant of Paxton, in the county of Worcester, in the province of the Massachusetts Bay where he followed the practice of physies and the making of astronomical calenulations. That a number of years he suffered persecution in consequence of his loyalty to your majesty, and attachment to the British government, was made a prisoner on the 23d day of September, A. D., 1780, accused of holding a traitorous correspondence with, and affording aid and comfort to the enemy, supposed to be your majesty's armies, but was liberated by giving bonds for his appearance before the Supreme Judicial Court in April following. That on the third day after he was thus recognized he received information that his adversaries had issued a second warrant with the design to put him in close confinement, and finding that his life was in danger, fled for protection to your majesty's army, then at New York.

That he resided within the British lines during the remainder of the war, and Congress, having ratified the treaty of peace between Great Britain and America, he returned to said Paxton in the year 1784, with a design to collect sundry debts due him and ascertain the value of the property he had left and remove his family to Nova Scotia. That although it had been in the sixth article of said treaty, that no persecutions would be commenced against any person, etc., for or by reason of the part he had taken in the war; and that no person would on that account suffer any future loss or damage, either in person, liberty or property, yet in less than two days after his return he was seized and imprisoned in the gaol in said county of Worcester, under the pretence of being brought to trial, in consequence of the accusations already mentioned. That without any trial, without the finding of any bill against him, and without his being allowed anything to eat, drink or wear, at the expense of the county or state (water excepted), he suffered two years and 11 months' confinement in a very disagreeable prison, although it had been customary to allow state's prisoners something for their subsistence, even if they had been thieves, highway robbers

and murderers, and although he frequently petitioned the general court or assembly of the commonwealth of Massachusetts praying for liberation and the enjoyment of those rights which were granted to him as one of your majesty's subjects in the definitive treaty of peace between Great Britain and America.

That for a long time he was treated with neglect and contempt, but was at last discharged from confinement on the 28th day of July, 1787, by order of the said general assembly. Then he was liberated in a very distressed condition, being destitute of house and the common necessities of life, but went with his claims for the loss of houses, lands, etc., to Montreal, in the province of Quebec in hopes it was in the power of the commissioners appointed by your majesty to inquire into the losses, services and sufferings of the American loyalists, to grant compensation.

That he found it was not in the power of the commissioners to receive his claims because they had not been delivered to them previous to the beginning of May, 1786, at which time he was in prison. He, therefore, went to Great Britain, petitioned for relief and had some compensation granted for what he had suffered in the time of the war, but not anything that he knows of, for his sufferings since the establishment of peace. That he returns his sincere thanks to your majesty for those favors, and further begs leave to mention that he returned to America in the year 1791, and having been informed that the commonwealth of Massachusetts had paid for his board whilst he had been a state's prisoner, went into that government to visit his friends in the year 1793, when he was unexpectedly seized, and imprisoned in the gaol in the county of Bristol, for not paying his board.

That he suffered four days, 18 hours and 15 minutes, close confinement in said county of Bristol, and lost by this prosecution 141 pounds, 16 shillings and 6 pence, sterling. He also lost, when imprisoned in Worcester, 273 pounds, 19 shillings and 9 pence, sterling, in consequence of his non-

appearance before the Supreme judicial court, when he resided within the British lines in the time of war, the greatest part of which sum was paid to the said commonwealth by bondsmen, who were also imprisoned.

That said imprisonment also prevented his collecting the debts that were due to him in said state, which amounted to 368 pounds, 6 shillings and 6 pence, sterling, including the principal, which joined to amount to 784 pounds, 2 shillings and 9 pence, beside the two years, eleven months, four days, 18 hours and 15 minutes imprisonment which he has suffered repugnant to the requisitions of the articles of peace.

That he has petitioned to your majesty's commissioners in Philadelphia, and those appointed by the president and senate of the United States of America, for the purpose of ascertaining the amount of all losses and damages as divers merchants and others. Your majesty's subjects have sustained in consequence of their being debarred by sundry lawful impediments from collecting their debts in said states, praying that they, the said commissioners, would aid, and assist him in obtaining compensation, but they esteem themselves as not empowered to act upon the subject because his imprisonment is considered not as lawful but as an unlawful impediment to his collecting his debts.

That he understands that a number of your majesty's subjects in Nova Scotia and elsewhere, who formerly belonged to Massachusetts, are debarred from receiving compensation for their debts in the same manner, although it does not appear by the records that the general assembly of Massachusetts ever repealed the laws they made in the time of war for the purpose of protecting the American loyalist, and which were repugnant to the definitive treaty of peace between Great Britain and America, till the year 1787.

That it appears by an act of congress passed in the year 1794 that no foreigner is allowed to sue any state within the limits of the United States of America. Therefore, he sees no way to obtain compensation for the injuries and abuses

that he has received than that of imploring your majesty's most gracious aid and assistance. He therefore prays that your majesty will be pleased to aid and assist your petitioner, and all others, your majesty's loyal subjects, who have been injured by violation of the treaty aforesaid, "for whom no provisions appear to be made for their relief" in obtaining compensation of the United States in such a way and manner as your majesty in your wisdom may see fit.

Sworn before me this 23d of July, 1799.

Luke Knowlton,

Member of the honorable council for the state of Vermont, in America, and justice of the Peace throughout the state.

The jail in which Dr. Stearns was confined stood on the west side of Lincoln street, about opposite the old brick building now occupied by the Morgan Construction Co. The building was 38 feet long and 28 feet wide, with seven feet studding, and built of wood in 1753. For five or six years subsequent to his liberation, in 1787, he spent the time in various localities in both the United States and Europe. In 1789 he was for a short time engaged in Philadelphia editing the Philadelphia Magazine.

A complete history of the life of Dr. Stearns would be most interesting reading. Unfortunately, however, only scattered fragments are to be found from which to weave the story. It appears that he was born in Bolton, Massachusetts, July 13, 1741, and when quite young, removed with his parents to the town of Paxton, when, at about the age of 25 years, he began the practice of medicine, compiling and publishing almanacs.

From his own writings we gather the information that in his youth he was taught by his parents and ministers to fear God and honor the king; that he was also instructed in the various branches of grammar, arithmetic, algebra, geometry, trigonometry, navigation, surveying, astronomy, music and medicine. That he always had an inclination to do good;

to walk in the paths of righteousness, and to shun vice and immorality.

He is said to have been a man of fine presence, kindly and generous disposition, and in conducting his profession was as attentive to the poor as the rich, whether compensated or not. Quietly and industriously he continued to ply his profession in the town of Paxton, serving whig and tory alike, till the close of the Revolutionary war. On the 23d of September, 1780, he was arrested on the accusation of holding traitorous correspondence with and affording aid and comfort to the enemy. The witness to this charge is said to have been a deserter from the British army, and that there was really no truth in his statement; nevertheless, as the doctor had apparently remained neutral, not assisting or showing preference for the patriot side of the conflict, in fact, certain issues of his almanac contained articles which seemed to show that he was not in full sympathy with the whig movement, therefore he had aroused the enmity of certain persons who were instrumental in having him punished.

The doctor gave bonds for his appearance before the Supreme judicial court, which was to meet in April, following his arrest; his sureties were Oliver and Daniel Witt, father and son. Each was recognized in the sum of 50 pounds sterling. This occurred on Saturday. On the next day, going to church, the doctor learned that a second warrant had been taken out with the object of placing him in close confinement, and believing his life to be in danger, he immediately started for New York, being followed some distance by an officer who failed to overtake him. This shows to what extremities the acts of persecution were prosecuted in the attempt to coerce, or punish those persons who were not inclined to aid or help forward the movement in opposition to British rule in the American colonies during that period.

His first wife having deceased prior to his arrest, the doctor remained in and about New York, at the same time practising his profession, till 1784, when he returned to Paxton (congress

having ratified the treaty of peace between Great Britain and America), his intention being to settle up his personal affairs and perhaps remove to Nova Scotia. Although in the sixth article of the treaty, ratified by congress, protection was given to persons who had taken part in the war, and stipulated that they should not suffer any future loss or damage, either in person, liberty or property, yet within two days after his return, he was seized and imprisoned in the jail at Worcester on pretence of being brought to trial, in consequence of the accusations already mentioned. There he was confined nearly three years, and is the Dr. Stearns mentioned by Lincoln in his history, who it was said detected poison in the cups used by some of Shays' insurgents at the Hancock arms, when they stopped there for the night in 1786. Petitions for his release, from the selectmen of Paxton and others, were of no avail.

He was, however, discharged from the Worcester jail the 28th day of July, 1787, by order of the general assembly. His money and property had all been sacrificed, his bondsmen (Capt. Witt and his son) had also been thrown into prison and forced to pay the amount of their bonds, 50 pounds sterling each, leaving them quite destitute, the older Mr. Witt being much advanced in years. On his liberation from prison he went to Montreal, and from there to England, for the purpose of securing, if possible, some returns for his great loss.

The fates seemed to be against him when it came to recovering his money. But while on the other side of the Atlantic he added to his stock of knowledge, and returned to America in 1791, appearing within the confines of Massachusetts in the year 1793, when he was again unexpectedly seized and imprisoned in the Bristol county jail on the charge of not paying his board while a state's prisoner, during his former incarceration. This confinement lasted, as he said, 4 days, 18 hours and 15 minutes, and that he and his bondsmen suffered in money to the amount of 784 pounds, 2 shillings and 9 pence, to say nothing of his physical suffering.

In the year 1796, or about that time, he settled in Dummerston, Vermont, where he was twice married. His second wife died there, and the following inscription may there be seen: "The Honorable Mrs. Sarah Stearns, the amiable Consort of the Hon. Samuel Stearns, one of the Senators of the University of Aberdeen in Scotland, Physician and Master of the Canon and Civil Laws, died in this Town, Oct. 14, 1801, aged 54 years, 10 months and 22 days."

His third marriage was to the widow of Alexander Kelly, Nov. 10, 1803. She was formerly of Bellingham, Mass., and the widow of Nathan Albee, who died in Bellingham, Feb. 16, 1792. On Feb. 2, 1797, the intention of marriage of Elizabeth Albee, widow to Alexander Kelly of Dummerston, Vermont, is recorded. In his marriage certificate Mr. Stearns states that he was one of the Royal pensioners of the kingdom of Great Britain, showing that at one time he received something in the way of compensation for his great loss.

Dr. Stearns died in Brattleboro, Vermont, Aug. 8, 1810.

Upon a slate stone there may be found the following inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Samuel Stearns, LL. D., who died Aug. 8, 1810, aged 63* years. Self-taught.

"Nature was his preceptor, philosophy his mistress, and astronomy his prompter. Disappointment ever succeeded his best endeavors; he deserved better. Ingratitude was the reward of his labors. Peace to his ashes."

See Vermont Historical Gazetteer, Hemenway, Vol. 5, Page 68.

*There may have been an error made in copying his age from the stone.

MEMORIAL TO WILLIAM MAYO BURGESS.

Mr. Burgess became a member of this society May 2, 1905, and although his connection with the organization was comparatively brief he promised to become a valuable acquisition to the society, as he possessed a real interest in things antique. His home as well as his place of business were furnished with various specimens of household utensils of former days, and had also contributed many articles which are on exhibition in the Society's Museum.

Mr. Burgess was the son of Joseph and Hannah (Mayo) Burgess, and was born in Hardwick, Mass., Dec. 25, 1847.

His parents were highly respected people in his native town, and the citizens of the village will long remember the father as the church deacon who rang the church bell daily for forty years. He was the seventh child in a large family, and of necessity started early in life to take his place in life's work. Coming to Worcester in 1868, he entered the employ of C. H. Stearns, baker, selling to traders principally, and it has been stated by his employer that he soon brought in more money than any other man in his employ. He was of a genial disposition and possessed of a fund of wit, and easily made friends. A change of business became necessary, and he engaged in the business of a tobacconist at 47 Main Street in Worcester, where his old friends soon sought him, and in this enterprise he was financially very successful. He died Nov. 22, 1906, leaving a widow and a daughter, Alice Burgess, by a former marriage, and now a resident in this city.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Worcester Society of Antiquity,

FOR THE YEAR 1907.

VOLUME XXIII.



Worcester, Mass.

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.

1908.

U. S. A. CXXXII.

CONTENTS

Four Hundred Twenty-sixth Meeting	105
Memorial of George Edwin Arnold	105
Special Meeting, May 21, 1907	111
Burnside's Expedition to North Carolina	111
Proceedings of Four Hundred and Twenty-seventh Meeting .	131
Nathan Perry, Church, Town and County Treasurer, and His Old Homestead	131
Memorial to Dr. Francis Brick	150
Copied from Caleb Burbank's Family Bible	152

Ames^{Gift} Anti. Soc.
1909

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND TWENTY-SIXTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, MAY 7, 1907.

Met at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present: Messrs. Balcom, Burleigh, Crane, Davidson, Eaton, Ely, Gates, A. V. Hill, George Maynard, W. H. Sawyer, Sanford, Wheeler, D. B. Williams, Major F. G. Stiles, Miss Barrett, Mrs. Balcom, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Manly, Miss Reed, Miss Sawyer, Miss Smith, Miss Clarke, Mrs. Gates, Miss Grover, Mrs. Sawyer, Mrs. Stiles and others.

The Librarian reported additions for the past month. Eighty-one bound volumes, ninety-one pamphlets, six bound volumes of *The Army and Navy Journal*, and a number of articles for the Museum. Special mention was made of the gifts from Mr. H. D. Barber, as well as of the contribution of Civil War relics from Mrs. Gertrude Parker Lane, consisting of two guns and a trunk full of relics collected by her deceased father, Raymond J. Parker, a veteran of that war. Also a large collection of articles from Miss Maria S. Clark, daughter of Julius L. Clark formerly a resident of Worcester and subsequently Insurance Commissioner for the State of Massachusetts, and from Mrs. J. A. W. Ramsay a Bible printed in Worcester by Isaiah Thomas in 1791, and a circular announcing the establishment of Daguerreotype Gallery 373, Broadway, N. Y., when Mr. Whittemore started that business in 1843.

MEMORIAL OF GEORGE EDWIN ARNOLD

BY GEORGE MAYNARD.

It is a fitting custom on the part of this Society to take proper notice of the death of any of its members; and at the request of the Executive Board I have prepared the follow-



ing notice of one of our associates, whose recent decease has been a matter of keen regret to a large circle of friends and acquaintances.

George Edwin Arnold, who at our meeting a month ago was here with us, apparently in good health, but whom we shall see no more, was born in Paxton, Mass., Dec. 21st, 1843, and was the son of Elisha and Lorinda (Doane) Arnold.

His mother was daughter of Welcome and Harriet Doane, respectively natives of Brookfield and North Brookfield, and granddaughter of Nathan Doane, a blacksmith, said to have come from England to Scituate, Mass., thence to Brookfield, where he died in 1834. He was a musician in the war of 1812.

George E. Arnold's grandfather, Oliver Arnold, came to Paxton from Uxbridge. The family were of good old Quaker stock, and descended from the Rhode Island family of Arnolds prominent in the history of that state.

The grandfather and grandmother lie buried in the peaceful shades of Mulberry Grove Cemetery in the town of Leicester. They lived on the road leading from Paxton to Worcester, near what is now known as the Arnold Reservoir, and here Oliver Arnold conducted a farm and also a mill business during a large part of his life.

His wife, Abigail Arnold, was of Scotch descent, one of the sturdy, robust women of her day and generation. They were the parents of eleven children, six boys and five girls, of whom Elisha Arnold, father of the subject of this sketch, was the youngest. He was born in Paxton, May 6th, 1820, and died there Sept. 30th, 1889. In his early life he was engaged in farming and mill work, but the later years of his life were spent in working at the boot business in Paxton and Worcester. He was an honest man, of quiet disposition, and highly respected by his associates.

George Edwin Arnold was the only child of Elisha and Lorinda Arnold. From about 1851 to 1856, the family lived in Worcester, afterwards returning to Paxton, where both

father and son worked for some years for the well known firm of boot manufacturers, Bigelow & Lakin, afterwards Bigelow & Son.

In his early years he attended school in the district where he lived, and afterwards attended Leicester Academy for several terms.

About 1865, he was married to Emily V. Brown of Leicester, Mass. They lived in Paxton one year, and then removed to Worcester, where they lived four years, during which time he worked in the boot shop of the late Joseph H. Walker.

But as it proved, this was not to be the business of his life, for at the end of that time he took up the line of clock and watch repairing, which he ever after followed.

From that time till about 1879, he made his residence in the neighboring town of Auburn, and then removed back to Worcester, where he has since continually resided.

Mr. Arnold's great natural characteristic was mechanical ability, a trait which he shared in common with several other members of his family. He had uncles who were manufacturers of card machines for cotton and woolen working, and there are now in operation in Worcester County factories machines which were made many years ago by his uncle, Addison Arnold.

In February, 1877, he took hold of the work of winding and regulating the clocks of Worcester schools. There were about 200 of them when he started in, and there are over 600 now. In addition to these, he later undertook the care of the clocks on the City Hall tower and that on the Fire Department Headquarters, as well as the one on the tower of the First Unitarian Church.

His predecessor in this line of work had been a man named Joy, and before his day the veteran George Elkins, had for many years had charge of them.

Mr. Arnold never learned the clock and watch business from any other person, but picked it up himself, and his long experience of forty years gave him great skill in it.

In all that time he had been a faithful public servant in that line, and the city of Worcester and his many patrons have been more deeply benefited by the services he has rendered, than they have perhaps realized.

A man of fine personal appearance and genial manners, for more than a generation he has been a familiar figure on our streets, and few men were known to a larger number of our citizens than he.

He was naturally inclined to side with reform movements, was a firm believer in the principle of No Licence, and at times had delivered temperance addresses.

During his residence here he had seen Worcester grow in population from 40,000 to more than three times that size, and he took an interest in its growth and prosperity.

He could, on occasion, write very interestingly, and left behind him a brief but touching sketch of his father's life, and also some lines dedicated to his memory, which will serve as a specimen of his efforts in that line.

They tell me of the "Better land," a realm so bright and fair,
Where all at last may enter, and dwell with Jesus there;
Where many of our loved ones, who have only gone before,
With outstretched hands await us, upon that golden shore.
There sorrow and affliction can never enter in,
For the brightness of God's glory fills every heart within.
Darkness nor gloom ne'er enter, and there can be no night,
For all is fair and beautiful, and Christ himself the Light.
To-day I mourn a Father; he was ever dear to me;
And I hold him, as I ever shall, in blessed memory.
Through child hood's days, and manhood's years, while life on earth
was given.

He loved me with a Father's love; he loves me still—in Heaven.
His presence was a blessing; his example was a power;
He felt that life was earnest; and, until his latest hour,
He battled manfully for Truth, for Justice, and for Right;
He dwelt in peace with all mankind,—he kept his honor bright.
His influence for good was felt by all who knew him here;
He left a good impression upon all both far and near;
And for her who shared his sorrows, and his joys, had ever striven
To make for her a happy home, while strength to him was given.
And as I sit and gaze upon that dear beloved face,
Where looks of love and sympathy so clearly I can trace,
A loneliness comes o'er me, when I think that ne'er again
Can I hear his voice of welcome, while on earth I yet remain.
But when at last my mission shall have ended here below,

And to earth's joys and sorrows I shall bid a last adieu,
If I, like him, have faithful been, and trust in Jesus' love,
I know I'll meet my Father, in that better land above.

Apr. 13th, 1891

Mr. Arnold left, besides his wife, a son who succeeds him in business, one daughter and two grandchildren.

His death occurred suddenly, from heart disease, at his residence, 235 Pleasant Street, Worcester, Monday, April 22d, 1907, and on April 24th, he was buried by the side of his parents in the old cemetery in his native town of Paxton.

For many years he had been a member of this Society, and for over two years had been a member of the Standing Committee on Nominations, and was at the time of his death its Chairman.

In view of the facts I have related, the following Resolutions are here offered for the Society's consideration:

Whereas it has pleased God to remove from our midst one who was for many years an honored member of this Society, and our esteemed friend,—

Therefore, Resolved, that while bowing to the will of Divine Providence, we desire to place upon record our sincere appreciation of the many good qualities of our late associate, George Edwin Arnold, and of his faithful services both here and elsewhere.

And Resolved, that we tender to his family in this day of their affliction our heartfelt sympathy and the assurance of the regard and esteem in which we held him in life, and shall continue to feel for his memory.

In behalf of the Executive Board,

GEORGE MAYNARD.

Worcester, May 7, 1907.

On presentation of the names of George D. Barber, Charles A. Denny, Rufus B. Dodge, John B. Goodell, John F. McGrath, Eugene M. Moriarty, George William Pickup, William I. Thompson, Henry E. Townsend, by the standing committee on nominations, they were elected to membership in this Society.

On motion of Mr. Crane, the President appointed the following Committee to consider and report at the next regular meeting some objective points for the next Field-Day excursion, Ellery B. Crane, Charles F. Darling and Frank E. Williamson.

President Maynard announced that a special meeting would be held on Tuesday evening, May 21, to give opportunity for General A. B. R. Sprague to address the members of the Society and their friends on the subject, "Burnside's Expedition to North Carolina."

Ellery B. Crane was called upon and read from "The Pennsylvania Magazine of History and Biography" extracts of an interesting sketch of the life and experience of Fredrika Baroness Riedesel during her stay in America at the time of the Revolutionary war, including the surrender of Burgoyne to General Gates.

SPECIAL MEETING.

TUESDAY EVENING, MAY 21, 1907.

A large audience gathered in Salisbury Hall to listen to the speaker of the evening. President Maynard presided. Delegations were present from the G. A. R. and the Woman's Relief Corps.

The meeting was opened with a duet by Mrs. Florence Lesure Johnson, soprano, Miss Grace Maynard, contralto, Mrs. Gertrude M. Foster, accompanist on the piano.

BURNSIDE'S EXPEDITION TO NORTH CAROLINA THE CAPTURE OF ROANOKE ISLAND.

BY GENERAL A. B. R. SPRAGUE.

In the early autumn of 1861, Ambrose Everett Burnside, who had just received from the president his commission as a brigadier general, was by General McClellan placed in charge of new troops arriving in Washington, to look after their discipline and drill, preparatory to assignment in the older divisions of the army then organizing under the name of the "Army of the Potomac."

Burnside was graduated at West Point in 1847, and among his fellow students were McClellan, Hancock, Foster, Reno, Parke, Gibbon, Griffin, Benét, De Russy and Wilcox of the Union army; Stonewall Jackson, Buckner, Bee, Pickett, Heth and others who espoused the confederate cause. He was in civil life at the outbreak of the war, having resigned his commission in the United States army in 1852. He was made colonel of the First Regiment, R. I. militia, April 16, 1861, and with his regiment left for the seat of war April 20. He commanded a brigade at the first Bull Run and was distinguished for his gallantry, generalship, and skill in that most disastrous battle.

In September of '61, Gen. Burnside suggested to Gen. McClellan the formation of a coast division of from 12,000 to 15,000 men, mainly from states bordering on the northern sea coast, many of whom would be familiar with the coasting trade, to fit out a fleet of light draught steamers, sailing vessels and barges, sufficient to transport the troops and supplies, to take and hold possession of the inland waters of the Atlantic coast. This plan was submitted by Gen. McClellan to the secretary of war and President Lincoln, by whom it was approved; and Gen. Burnside was ordered to New York to fit out the fleet, and on Oct. 23 orders were issued establishing his headquarters for the concentration of troops in Annapolis, Md., where they arrived from time to time, and encamped on beautiful grounds just outside the town.

The division was organized into three brigades which were placed in command of Gen. John G. Foster, Gen. Jesse L. Reno and Gen. John G. Parke, three of Gen. Burnside's most trusted friends, who had been cadets together with him at West Point, and who, at his request, had been detailed from their commands in the regular army for this service. Gen. Foster, then captain of topographical engineers, was with Maj. Anderson when Fort Sumter was bombarded and surrendered.

The First brigade, commanded by Gen. Foster, was made up of the Twenty-third, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-fifth, Twenty-seventh Massachusetts, and Tenth Connecticut. The Second brigade consisted of the Twenty-first Massachusetts, Fifty-first New York, Fifty-first Pennsylvania, and Ninth New Jersey, and was commanded by Gen. Reno. The Fourth and Fifth Rhode Island, the Eighth Connecticut, and Ninth New York, composed the Third brigade, and was commanded by Gen. Parke.

Under these experienced officers camp life was no holiday service and the progress in discipline and drill was very rapid. The days were filled up with company, battalion and brigade

drills. The men were instructed in the bayonet exercise and ambulance drill, and I think it is safe to say that no body of troops ever entered the field better prepared to render a good account of themselves than Burnside's men of the coast division.

Affairs did not progress so smoothly in New York. Light draught vessels only could be of service, and almost everything of that sort had been previously called into the government employ; but on December 12, Gen. Burnside reported Gen. McClellan, that a sufficient amount of transportation and armament had been secured for the division. It was indeed a motley fleet! North river barges, and propellers had been strengthened from deck to keelson by heavy oak planks, and water-tight compartments were built in them.

They were so arranged that parapets of sand bags or bales of hay could be built upon their decks, and each one carried from four to six guns. Sailing vessels from the coasting trade had been fitted up in like manner. Several large passenger steamers which were guaranteed to draw less than eight feet of water, together with tug and ferry boats, served to make up the fleet with capacity to transport 15,000 troops, with baggage, camp equipage, rations, etc.

Light draught sailing vessels were also added to the fleet, on which were stored building materials for bridges, rafts, entrenching implements, quartermaster's stores, tools, extra ordnance stores, etc.; all of which, including coal and water vessels chartered in Baltimore, were ordered to rendezvous at Fortress Monroe. The transports were ordered to Annapolis harbor, at which point, after mortifying and vexatious delays, they all arrived January 4, 1862; and on this day, orders were issued for embarkation, which were received throughout the camp with enthusiastic cheers.

On January 5 the troops began to embark. On that night two or three inches of snow fell, which gave to the camp and surrounding country on the morning of the sixth, a picturesque appearance. Regiment after regiment left the

cheerless camp, and with bands playing and colors flying, marched to the point of embarkation. The lines of troops with dark uniforms and glittering bayonets contrasted strangely with the snow-white fields, as they passed through the quaint old town of Annapolis, the inhabitants of which were in the main quite disloyal. No cheers or friendly voices such as they had heard *en route* from their homes encouraged them now.

The order "to break camp" had been obeyed with alacrity, and more troops moved into the academy grounds than could be embarked, so that large numbers remained there for the night. "This bivouac," said Gen. Burnside, "was one of the most inspiring and beautiful that I saw during the war."

The last regiment was afloat on the eighth. On the morning of the ninth, the fleet sailed away; the bands played "Dixie" and the soldiers cheered. By the night of the tenth, all the vessels of the fleet, of more than 80 in number, had concentrated at Fortress Munroe, and that night the vessels were illuminated, and the strains of martial music, and the voices of brave men made the welkin ring.

Only Gen. Burnside, the brigade commanders and two or three staff officers knew the destination of the fleet. Yet, there were no complaints or questionings. Sealed orders were given to the commander of each vessel, to be opened at sea. Military and naval officers of high rank were doubtful of the success of the expedition, and so expressed themselves to Gen. McClellan and to the president; and the latter was warned that the vessels were unfit for sea, and a total failure would result.

At times in the past, the movements of our forces had become known to the enemy in advance, but in the case of this expedition, the secret had been well kept.

President Lincoln was importuned by a public man, who almost demanded to be informed where we were going. Finally, the president said to him, "Now, I will tell you in great confidence where they are going, if you will promise

not to speak of it to any one." The promise was given and Mr. Lincoln said, "Well, now, my friend, the expedition is going to sea."

On the night of January 12, the fleet moved away at a given signal. After passing out of the Chesapeake, it was made known to us that the destination of the fleet was Hatteras inlet. Gen. Burnside's headquarters were on a large steamer, the "George Peabody"; but, for this voyage, he took the smallest vessel in the fleet, a little propeller called the "Pickett." He did this, as he tells us, "because of the great criticism which had been made as to the unseaworthiness of the vessels of the fleet, and because of my desire to show to the men my faith in their adaptability to the service. Their weaknesses were known to me, but they were the best that could be procured, and it was necessary that the service should be performed, even at the risk of losing lives by shipwreck. The weather was threatening, but I did not foresee the storms by which we were overtaken. At that time, we had no weather signal reports, but the sailing would not have been delayed in any event, because the orders to proceed to our work were imperative."

My own regiment, the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts, except two companies on the "Zouave," was on board the steamer "New York," having in tow a barge, the "Rocket." We left Hampton roads at noon on Sunday, the 12th, and at noon on Monday, the 13th, our anchor kissed the drifting sands of Hatteras inlet, the wind northeast, and blowing a gale. Most of the fleet arrived inside the bar during the afternoon. The propeller, "City of New York," laden with supplies and ordnance stores went to pieces on the bar. Her officers and crew clung to the rigging and were rescued by surf boats. This steamer, "City of New York" found its way into the newspapers as the Steamer "New York," on which my regiment embarked, and its loss being reported "with all on board", I had the pleasure not often accorded to mortals of reading in a New York journal, my own obituary.

Vessels of too heavy draught to pass over the bar anchored outside. In the attempt to reach one of these, in a surf boat, Col. Allen and the surgeon of the Ninth New Jersey, were lost in the breakers. The ship "Pocahontas," with over 100 horses, was a total loss. The gunboat "Zouave" on which were two companies, was sunk in the inlet after she had crossed the bar, and proved a total loss, but the men were saved.

From the fourteenth to the twenty-sixth, we had terrific weather; signals of distress, the flag union down, were displayed from numerous vessels, which were in collision; and it required the exercise of the utmost skill of the commanders of vessels, and the officers and soldiers to prevent general disaster. Some of the staterooms on the deck of our transport were swept away, and "Cat head drills," as we called them, became necessary, when all on board, with pike and pole, sought to ward off the uncontrollable craft that threatened our destruction. The lights were ordered out on the fifteenth. On that day, we lowered into a boat, in the swift current, the body of a comrade who had died, and buried him on the beach at twilight, the wild waves chanting his requiem.

Under favorable circumstances, we should have reached Roanoke island in five days from Fortress Munroe, instead of thirty days required. The salt pork cooked in Baltimore was not appetizing in the rough sea; and the entire fleet was many days on short rations of ropy water, barreled in Baltimore two months before, and passing through its first stage of fermentation. There was "water, water everywhere, but not a drop to drink", and flags of distress were hoisted on many vessels, in consequence.

Said Gen. Burnside, "On one of these dreary days, I gave up all hope and walked to the bow of the vessel that I might be alone. Soon after, a small black cloud appeared in the angry, gray sky, just above the horizon, and very soon spread so as to cover the entire canopy, and a copious fall

of rain came to our relief. Signals were given to "spread sails" to catch the water, and in a short time, abundance was secured for all. I was at once cheered up, but very much ashamed of the distrust which I had allowed to get the mastery of me."

Efforts to pass the fleet from the inlet, over the swash, to Pamlico sound were unsuccessful, for the reason that only six feet of water could be found in the tortuous channel; and, as most of our vessels drew more than six feet, it became necessary to deepen it. By a tedious process this was accomplished, and on the twenty-seventh, we were fairly over the swash, and with anchors "hove short", we awaited a signal which, on February 5, put the fleet of seventy-five vessels in regular order up the Pamlico, toward the scene of our new struggle. Orders were given for the advance on Roanoke island, and detailed instructions for the landing of troops and the mode of attack.

The gunboats under Commodore Goldsborough were in advance and on the flank. The fleet presented an imposing appearance as it moved up the sound. The day was beautiful. At sundown, we anchored about ten miles from Roanoke island. Our gunboats were out in advance to protect the transports from the enemy's fleet under Commodore Lynch, known to be in the vicinity.

At 8 o'clock on the morning of the sixth, we moved forward, but a gale sprung up, and our progress was slow to the entrance of Croatan sound, where we anchored for the night, all lights carefully concealed. On the morning of the seventh, the gunboats passed into Croatan sound, followed by the transports. The confederate fleet was seen close in shore under the batteries of the island. A signal gun, from one of the forts, announced our approach.

Roanoke island is about twelve miles long and from two to three miles wide. Between it and the mainland is Croatan sound, which connects Pamlico sound on the south and Albemarle on the north. East of Roanoke island is Roanoke

sound, and "Bodies island" lies between Roanoke sound and the broad Atlantic. At 9 o'clock on the morning of the seventh, one of the naval vessels opened fire, which was replied to by the confederates, and by 10.30 the firing became rapid and general. The enemy had driven a line of piles across the channel to obstruct the progress of our gunboats, leaving a narrow passage for a possible retreat of which in due time they availed themselves. The strongest of their boats, the "Curlew," was sunk by a 100-pound shot. Our guns soon got the range of their batteries, and by skill and rapid firing, almost silenced them. The bombardment continued with spirit during the day.

The military defences of Roanoke island consisted of three forts on the west side of the island, mounting twenty-five 32-pounder cannon; and on the east side of the island was a battery of two 32-pounders. In the center of the island was a redoubt, about eighty feet long, with embrasures for three cannon, on the right of which was a swamp; on the left, a marsh,—the redoubt extending between them, and facing to the south. The only approach from this direction was by a narrow corduroy road. All these defences were north of the center of the island.

The confederate military force upon the island was about 4,000 men. Gen. Henry A. Wise, the commander, was at Nag's head on Bodies island, reported sick; and in his absence, Col. Shaw of the Eighth North Carolina assumed command of the confederate troops. The approach of our fleet was discovered on February 6, by the pickets on the south end of the island, and orders were issued for the disposition of troops to meet and repel our attack. Artillery, supported by a large force of infantry, was sent to Pugh's and Ashby's landings, with instruction to fight us at the water's edge should we attempt to land.

A little after four o'clock in the afternoon, while the forts and fleet were exchanging shot and shell, Gen. Foster embarked 500 men of the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts, on

the "Pilot Boy," towing all the small boats from the vessels of his brigade, loaded with detachments from the regiments composing it, in all 1,400 men, and headed for a landing-place under cover of the fire of the "Delaware" and "Pickett" whose bursting shell accelerated the retreat of an ambuscaded force of the enemy. The boats grounded in the shallow water, into which the men sprang and waded to the shore. The first detachments of the other brigades quickly followed, and in less than twenty minutes, 4,000 troops were passing over the marshes at a double-quick, and formed in order on the hard ground.

In his official report, Gen. Burnside says, "I never witnessed a more beautiful sight than that presented by the approach of these vessels to the shore, and the landing and the forming of the troops." Before midnight, all who were to participate in the engagement were ashore, except the Twenty-fourth Massachusetts, which was on board a transport aground in the sound. Our bivouac was cold and dreary, without shelter, with clothing wet at the landing, and in the marshes. A drizzly rain through the night, continuing through the following morning added to our discomfort. I shared my blanket in the early morning hours, on a pile of unshelled corn, with a gallant soldier, Col. Charles L. Russell, of the Tenth Connecticut, who died on the battlefield before meridian.

The forward movement was made soon after daybreak. From the wounding of our pickets we knew that the enemy was not far away. Marching by the flank, Foster's brigade in the advance, the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts leading, while fording a creek within a half-mile of our bivouac, flanked by a swamp and thicket, we received a salute of musketry from the concealed enemy, whose shot passed over our heads with our hearty concurrence. Two companies, A, Capt. Pickett, and E, Capt. O'Neil were advanced under my direction as skirmishers and we pressed the enemy's pickets rapidly, for a mile, to the main body in a strong position.

Here we awaited the arrival of the column. A corduroy road from this point, bearing sharply to the left, swept by the enemy's guns its full length, flanked on either side by almost impenetrable swamp and water, through which no troops could successfully charge the battery in front. The clearing was about 350 yards long by 200 yards wide, to give full sweep to their guns. Upon the arrival of our brigade, Gen. Foster directed me to form the right wing of the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts, across the opening and commence the attack. Six Dahlgren howitzers were our only artillery, and were placed on our left, in the opening. The enemy behind the redoubt responded briskly with musketry and artillery in embrasures.

There would have been little left of the force in front of the enemy's battery, but for the too great elevation of their guns, whose shot passed over our heads and cut the forest trees, just in the rear of our line. The rest of our brigade was formed to the right and left of our position. Hospitals were established and stretchers bore the wounded from the field, the members of the regimental band, who had been drilled for the purpose, as an ambulance corps. Gen. Reno's brigade proceeded to penetrate the swamp and woods, to turn the enemy's right. Gen. Parke's brigade pushed forward to turn, if possible, their left. Their movements were necessarily slow, owing to the depth of water, dense underbrush, briars and vines intertwined in a most fantastic network. Meanwhile the engagement waxed warm in front, where no forward movement could be made, and it was only possible to draw and return the enemy's fire.

Our Dahlgrens, with but ten rounds of ammunition left, ceased firing, reserving these for an emergency. Gen. Reno, meanwhile, with the Twenty-first Massachusetts, Fifty-first New York, Ninth New Jersey and Fifty-first Pennsylvania, was hotly engaged but kept moving to the left, and after a lapse of three hours, succeeded in turning the enemy's right, when he ordered a charge,—which was

most gallantly executed—the regimental flag of the Twenty-first Massachusetts was the first to float over the enemy's works, closely followed by the national flag of the Fifty-first New York. Just previous to this charge the Ninth New York charged the batteries in front up the corduroy road, but quickly fell back upon the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts whose officers and men held the way till order was restored and a panic averted.

No troops could approach from the front while the enemy occupied the battery, for every inch of the road was covered by its guns:—and yet, the illustrated papers of the day picture this charge up the road and over the parapet, with bayonets fixed, in a hand-to-hand fight with the enemy who had fled in great confusion, leaving their dead and wounded in the battery, before a man from our forces had reached their works. We rapidly followed the retreating confederates to their camp at the north end of the island, passing a house where Capt. O. Jennings Wise lay dying from wounds, where they surrendered unconditionally to Gen. Foster. The Twenty-fourth Massachusetts having freshly arrived took the advance in the pursuit and was present at the surrender. Some had escaped to Nag's head. In this action our loss was forty-two killed, and 209 wounded. The confederate loss, as reported, was twenty-three killed, fifty-eight wounded, and sixty-two missing. By this victory we gained possession of the island, with five forts mounting forty-two guns—quarters for 4,000 troops—3,000 stand of arms—2,527 prisoners, including 159 officers.

In his official report to the adjutant general of the army, Gen. Burnside said: "When it is remembered that for one month our officers and men had been confined on crowded ships, during the prevalence of severe storms, some of them having to be removed from stranded vessels, thumping for days on sand-banks, and under constant apprehension of collision, then landing, without blankets or tents, on a marshy shore—wading knee-deep in mud and water to a permanent

landing; exposed all night to a cold rain, then fighting for four hours—pursuing the enemy some eight miles, bivouacing in the rain,—many of them without tents or covering for two or three nights—it seems wonderful that not one murmur or complaint has been heard from them. They have endured all these hardships with the utmost fortitude and have exhibited on the battle field a coolness, courage and perseverance worthy of veteran soldiers.”

The occupation of the enemy's camp, the custody of the prisoners, the burial of the dead, the sufferings and heroism of the wounded linger in our memories to-day, after a lapse of forty-five years, with all the vividness of first impressions. The battle of Roanoke island was followed by the occupation of Elizabeth City, Edenton and Plymouth. Within ten days of their capture the prisoners were paroled and sent away. When an exchange was agreed upon Gen. Burnside saw that his colored servant, who was captured at Bull Run, was included in the list, and the faithful fellow found his way to his old employer, before going to see his wife and child.

On February 25, orders were issued to embark for Newberne, a city on the Neuse river, toward the south of the inland sea. Following the course of this navigable river is a railroad, which runs from Moorehead City near the Atlantic, through Newberne to Goldsboro and Raleigh. On March 12 the entire command was anchored off Slocum's creek, about fifteen miles from Newberne. On the morning of the 13th the landing was made by the troops, from small boats, all springing into the water as the bow of each grounded, and the men formed in the woods on the shore, in companies.

By 1 o'clock the troops were on the march toward Newberne. No ammunition or supplies could be taken along except what the men carried themselves. No artillery except the small howitzers, and these were hauled by the troops with drag-ropes, with the utmost difficulty. The rain was falling, the ground was spongy, the mud deep, and the roads

almost impassable. Gen. Burnside said this was one of the most disagreeable and difficult marches he witnessed during the war. Passing lines of abandoned field works, we felt the enemy's pickets just before dark, about four miles from Newberne.

We filed into the woods to the right and left of the road in close column, and a most dreary bivouac followed that night, no fires being permitted. By direction of Gen. Foster, with ten picked officers and men, armed with muskets, I made a reconnoissance to our right, and front, to the Neuse river, and near to the line of works behind which the enemy securely waited for the morning. Back to our bivouac before midnight, I lay on the wet ground by the side of a sleeping comrade, a part of whose blanket I appropriated without his knowledge, for he was sleeping as soundly as Adam in the Garden of Eden when his rib was said to have been removed, to make something better than he had ever dreamed of.

At an early hour of the morning of the 14th we moved on the enemy's works, in a fog so dense that it was impossible to see the intrenchments and other defences close by, which were across our pathway to Newberne, and the first notice served upon us that we were trespassing on forbidden ground was a cannon shot that ricocheted past us as we moved by the flank to our place on the right, in the line of battle; our regiment and brigade having the advance as at Roanoke island, Gen. Reno's brigade moved to the left, Gen. Parke's forming a central column, so that he could readily support either of the others. The military defences at this point were a strong line of works, at right angles with the river, some two miles in length, and terminating at the land end in impenetrable swamp.

On the river bank was Fort Thompson, a hexagonal, covered work, the guns in its bastions enfilading the entire front of this line—along which were strong breastworks of wood and earth, protected by abattis, and a succession of thirteen

small redans along the ridges of ravines, where the enemy's infantry could get an enfilading fire on our approach to their line. Their artillery consisted of forty-six guns, of large calibre and eighteen field-pieces. The confederate troops were under command of Gen. Lawrence O'Brien Branch and consisted of eight regiments of infantry, several light batteries and independent companies. In front of their works the field was clear for about 350 yards to the woods, except by fallen trees to stay our passage over the ground.

Our forces, having formed lines of battle along the edge of the wood, the fighting commenced along the whole line, at 7:30, the artillery and infantry behind the breastworks pouring forth a destructive fire, which was returned by our advancing regiments. The confederates fought from behind their parapets, suffering little loss compared with ours. Several desperate but unsuccessful charges were made by our troops, but the left center was finally carried by the Fourth Rhode Island. The firing continued for more than two hours, without result. Our howitzers kept up the unequal fight with difficulty. There was enough iron and lead passed over our heads, cutting off branches and perforating the trunks of the trees, to have annihilated our command with guns at the right elevation.

A charge of General Foster's brigade on the right of the line carried the works of the right center and we were over the breastworks with the enemy disappearing in the woods before us. Our left was still fighting the enemy's right, and minie bullets, for a time, were flying about us from our own forces outside the works on our left. When the Fourth Rhode Island broke the enemy's line, near the left center it was followed by the whole of Parke's brigade. The enemy now fled in disorder, leaving 200 prisoners, sixty-four cannon, eighteen of which were field-pieces. This brilliant and decisive success cost us ninety-one killed and 466 wounded. The enemy passed through Newberne, burning the long, covered bridge, over the Trent river, behind them, and setting fire to the town in many places.

Rapidly pursuing, we reached the bank of the Trent, near the burning bridge, and some of our naval boats having passed the blockade of sunken vessels and torpedoes in the Neuse, near the battle-ground, had worked their way up to the city and aided in the transportation of the troops across. It was my fortune to land the right wing of the Twenty-fifth Massachusetts, the first troops to enter the city, and take possession of large depots of stores left by the enemy. In addition to the burning buildings, tar, pitch, rosin and turpentine were burning on the wharves, and a dense, black smoke hung over the city like a pall, and as I looked upon it I could think of nothing but Sodom and Gomorrah. Heavy details of troops were made to extinguish the fires, and before night the flames were stayed.

Having occupied the city, buried the dead and made provision for the care of the wounded, both union and confederate, General Burnside issued the following orders:—

GENERAL ORDERS NO 11.

Hd. Qu. Dept. of N. C.

Newberne, Mar. 16, 1862.

“The general congratulates his troops on their gallant and hard-won victory of the 14th. Their courage, their patience, their endurance of fatigue, exposure and toil cannot be too highly praised. After a tedious march, dragging their howitzers by hand through swamps and thickets; after a sleepless night passed in a drenching rain, they met the enemy in his chosen position, found him protected by strong earthworks, mounting many and heavy guns, and although in an open field themselves, they conquered. With such soldiers advance is victory.”

The investment and reduction of Fort Macon became a military necessity. This fort commanded the Beaufort inlet, through which a contraband trade was carried on with England. It was washed on three sides by the sea, and was only to be approached by the narrow strip of land, the north-

ern extremity of which it occupied. It was a work of masonry, surrounded by a ditch, and a glacis having casemated works, and guns *en barbette*. It was occupied by confederate troops commanded by Colonel White, five companies, 500 men.

Gen. Parke was entrusted with the siege of the fort, and crossing Bogue sound erected his batteries of eight and ten-inch mortars and ten-pounder parrots, on the sand strip south of it. Two weeks were consumed in this work.

Anxious to repossess the fort without bloodshed, Gen. Burnside met Col. White, the confederate commander, under a flag of truce, on the beach, and offered him the privilege of surrendering with his men on their parole of honor, and agreed to permit them to return to their homes with their personal effects.

Col. White declined to surrender the fort without resistance. Temporarily disabled and on crutches, I was detailed as bearer of dispatches from Newberne to Gen. Burnside. I was expressed on a hand-car, propelled by negroes, in the night-time, over thirty-five miles of rails, only about five miles of which were within our lines.

It was a weird ride, never to be forgotten; the blackness of darkness pervaded the woods and swamps of the almost uninhabited territory through which we passed; with here and there a pine tree burning, only to make the darkness more visible. The stillness was broken only by the wheels of our car, and the hoot owl whose meditations we disturbed. We arrived safely at Moorehead City and crossed the water to Beaufort—the day before the bombardment.

From my quarters I watched the progress of the fight. At 6 o'clock on the morning of March 25, our batteries opened fire and twenty minutes later the fort returned a sharp and well-sustained fire from twenty-one guns, the shot striking short, or passing over our batteries throwing up clouds of sand, doing little damage to our forces. About 9 o'clock our gun-boats began the attack on the water-side, and sent a storm of projectiles into the fort. This

continued for about two hours when a rough sea made it impossible to continue the attack to any purpose and the gun-boats retired, leaving the batteries on terra firma to fight it out. The firing continued without interruption till 5 o'clock on the afternoon, when a white flag was displayed on the parapet.

I could see the passage of every shell through the air from our mortars and as they exploded over the fort, or fell within it. Our parrot shot and shell sent into the air, to the height of the flag-staff, great clouds of dirt. Of the 1,150 shots from our three batteries, 500 took effect within the work, not counting the shells that exploded over the fort. The fire of the parrot guns was most destructive, these three pieces having disabled nineteen of the enemy's guns. Our batteries were placed and the fire directed by Lieut. Flagler, afterward Gen. Flagler, chief of ordnance, U. S. A. The garrison of the fort, about 500 men, were so well protected that its loss was only eight killed and twenty-four wounded.

On the morning of the 26th, I boarded the "Alice Price" by invitation of Gen. Burnside and with him was present at the surrender of the fort. The garrison marched out, stacked their guns, and we went in with the Fifth Rhode Island as a temporary garrison and "Old Glory" went up on the flag-staff, while the bugle of Joe Green rang out the "Star spangled banner." The fort bore witness of the frightful effects of the iron storm. The capture of Fort Macon gave us the best inlet to the inland sea and completed the land blockade of all that part of the coast.

The victories of Gen. Burnside in North Carolina, which gave us 3,600 prisoners, 179 cannon, a large quantity of small arms and ammunition was deeply humiliating to the confederates, and the cause of great rejoicing at the north which was tremulously anxious, for it had been disturbed by the repulses of our army oftener than cheered by victory.

The defeat at Big Bethel, the rout at Bull Run, the disastrous battle at Balls Bluff had cast their shadows over the

land. Able officers and seamen did not believe in the success of the Burnside expedition and the very winds and waves foreshadowed the destruction of our unseaworthy fleet; but when the news of the victories at Roanoke Island, Newberne, Fort Macon, Donelson, and Fort Henry came, there went up a great shout of thanksgiving and praise to Almighty God that He had not forgotten His own.

We grew used to shot and shell, to vacant places in the ranks, to horse and rider going down together and to death in every form on many a hard-fought field in the four years of conflict, such as the world never saw; and we affirm that no braver volunteers ever shouldered a musket or swung a saber than the devoted followers of Burnside, Foster, Reno and Parke through the drifting sands of Hatteras, to conquer and hold Carolina. Said its commander: "The Burnside expedition has passed into history. Its record we can be proud of. No body of troops had more difficulties to overcome in the same space of time. Its perils were both by land and water. Defeat never befell it. No gun was lost by it. Its experience was a succession of honorable victories."

Later on, as in the great struggle the union cause hung trembling in the balance, when jealousies and strife were manifest among officers of rank, we felt that such devotion, self-sacrifice, loyalty and affection as inspired Burnside, Foster, Reno and Parke would have earlier ushered in the day-dawn of victory and peace.

In the Burnside Expedition there were five regiments of Massachusetts Volunteers, two of them from the county of Worcester; the Twenty-first and Twenty-fifth including about 900 men from the city of Worcester. Later eleven regiments of Massachusetts troops served in the Department of North Carolina, the Second, Fifth, Eighth, Seventeenth, Thirty-third, Forty-third, Forty-fourth, Forty-fifth, Forty-sixth and Fifty-first Infantry and the Second Heavy Artillery.

The State of Massachusetts has appropriated the sum of five thousand dollars for a monument to be erected in the

National cemetery at Newberne in grateful memory of her soldiers and sailors who died in the Department of North Carolina.

Of the original general officers of the Burnside expedition, Gen. John G. Parke, once commander of the Ninth army corps survived for many years. He passed to the retired list of officers of the army of the United States crowned with honor for the distinguished service he rendered the country in War and in Peace. On South Mountain his comrades of the Ninth corps have erected a monument near the spot where Gen. Jesse L. Reno fell on September 14, 1862.

Said Gen. Wilcox to his associates at the dedication of this monument, September 14, 1889:—"His name hovers like a star over the North Carolina expedition. It is as one of the bright spots in the gloomy period of the Second Bull Run, and it shone through our tears in its culmination at South Mountain. Had he lived to the end of the war, he would undoubtedly have attained one of the highest positions if not the highest in the army." Said Gen. Burnside:—"I will not attempt in a public report to express the deep sorrow which the death of the gallant Reno caused me. No more valuable life than his has been lost during the conflict for the country's preservation." In his official report, Gen. McClellan said: "In Gen. Reno the nation lost one of its best general officers. He was a skillful soldier—a brave and honest man."

His dying thoughts were with his men and as he was borne from the field, he said, "Tell my command that if not in the body I will be with them in the spirit."

Gen. John G. Foster was every inch a soldier. His heroic devotion to duty and his unconquerable will kept him in the saddle and the field when suffering severely from an old wound received in Mexico. He died in Nashua, the home of his boyhood, September 2, 1874. When told that he could not live long, he said: "I have faced death many times and am not afraid to die." On the day of his funeral old com-

rades in arms joined the great concourse of the people and paid the last tribute to his memory. They laid him to rest in the uniform of his rank, covered him with the choicest flowers and left him in the churchyard of his kindred "till the day dawns and the shadows flee away."

On the morning of September 13, 1881, General Burnside obeyed the summons of the messenger of death, who came unheralded to his home on the Narragansett and before friends could gather at his bedside, his noble spirit had returned to God who gave it. Never have I witnessed such sincerity of sorrow as on that beautiful autumn day when all that was mortal of Burnside was committed "dust to dust."

It was truthfully said of him by a member of the national house of representatives, who served with him in the old Ninth corps, "I know of no other general in the union army who so completely held the unquestioned confidence and affection of his men. To them his presence was an inspiration, his smile almost a benediction. If he had faults or weaknesses they were in his excessive generosity, his open-hearted frankness, his amiability of temper, his splendid magnanimity. His only faults sprang from the development of his illustrious virtues." For twenty years preceding his death he was my friend. He was

"Mild in manner, fair in favor,
Kind in temper, fierce in fight,
Warrior nobler, gentler, braver,
Never will behold the light."

During an intermission Mrs. Johnson sang "The Star Spangled Banner." Remarks followed at the close of the address, participated in by Major William T. Harlow the latter confining his remarks to an account of the death of Gen. Jesse L. Reno. A vote of thanks was extended to General Sprague, and all present joined in singing "America" and the exercises were closed.

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND TWENTY-SEVENTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, JUNE 4, 1907

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present: Messrs. Abbot, Bill, Burleigh, Bliss, Baldwin, Blanchard, Bond, Boland, Charles A. Chase, Crane, Coffin, Davidson, Eaton, Ely, Flinn, Forehand, Harlow, George Maynard, Nathaniel Paine, Potter, Roe, Sherman, Silvester, Sanford, Tatman, Williamson, Mrs. Barrett, Miss Barrett, Miss Cogswell, Mrs. Darling, Mrs. Flinn, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Manly, Miss Reed, Miss Smith, Miss Grover and others.

The Librarian reported additions for the past month. Eighty-one bound volumes, forty-three pamphlets, one hundred sixty-nine papers, five maps, eight views of Worcester localities and a collection of programmes for various entertainments. Attention was called to the contribution from Mr. William H. Brown and the American Antiquarian Society, and of the ten volumes of Vital records from the Secretary of State.

The Standing Committee on Nominations presented the name of William Henry Buck and he was elected a member of this Society.

Mr. Crane for the Committee on Field-Day, reported that a trip to Gloucester, Mass., was recommended and that Saturday, June 29, be selected for the excursion. The report was accepted and the recommendation adopted.

The paper announced for the evening was then presented, Mrs. Hildreth having previously read it before the D. A. R.

NATHAN PERRY, CHURCH, TOWN AND COUNTY
TREASURER, AND HIS OLD HOMESTEAD.

BY MRS. A. P. HILDRETH.

The name of Perry was a very common one in the early settlement of our country, and there were many families

by that name in different localities and though at this distance it seems as though they were connected, it is not certain, nor is it easy to settle the question. Prof. Arthur L. Perry, now deceased, who made quite extended research in England, says the Perrys, our ancestors, were from pure English stock and were descended from Rev. John Perry, Rector of Farnborough, Essex, who died in 1621, and from two others in succession by the name of John Perry, both of them prominent in the Cloth-workers Company of London, and equally prominent perhaps in the Parish of St. Sepulchre, where the elder one was buried. This church was burned in the great fire of London in 1666. The third John Perry took occasion of these disasters in London to migrate to Massachusetts within the year. He might have previously decided to go to the New World as many of his relatives had gone before but there is no doubt in my mind that that great disaster hastened his removal. The family had found a home in Watertown and Cambridge on the banks of the Charles River for about ninety years, when April 15th, 1751, Josiah Perry and his son Nathan bought the large farm in Worcester on what is now Vernon St., Union Hill. It was formerly called "Sagatabscot Hill," a name given it by the Indians; many members of the family still occupy portions of the land bought in 1751. As the ladies of the Col. Timothy Bigelow Chapter are an organization for "Looking backward," not forward, I wish to take you back two or three generations, as we have learned much concerning their lives at that time, and while in the old country, desiring also to preserve everything in reference to it that will interest or show influence on their future and explain many traits of character. We have just referred to the Cloth-workers Company of London, at the time when John Perry was put apprentice to that Guild, that is, in 1621, it was the foremost of all craft unions of London,—as men "dealing in the principal and noblest staple ware of all these Islands," as King James 1st of England said when he was incorporated into that society on the 12th of June, 1607, an hon-

orary and royal Cloth-worker for eighteen years, his death occurring in March, 1625. The other Craft Guilds were only less prominent and self-respecting than this one, and seven years' apprenticeship formed the necessary prelude to full membership of these Trade Guilds. Their regulations were of the minutest character, the quality and value of the work were rigidly prescribed. The hours of toil fixed from daybreak to curfew and strict provisions were made against competition in labor.

At each meeting of these Guilds their members gathered around the Craft-box, which contained the rules of their society and stood with bared heads as it was opened. The warden and a quorum of Guild brothers formed a court which enforced the ordinances of the Guild—inspected all work done by its members,—confiscated unlawful tools, or unworthy goods—and disobedience of their orders was punished by fines, or as a last resort by expulsion, which involved the loss of a right to trade. A common fund was raised by contribution among the members which not only provided for the trade objects of the Guild, but also sufficed to found chantries and masses and set up painted windows in the church of their patron saint. Even at the present day the arms of a Craft-Guild may often be seen blazoned in cathedrals side by side with those of prelates, and of kings.

The function of the cloth-worker proper was partly mechanical, but mainly mercantile. The clothiers stood apart as persuing the most *important branch* of England's industry, and the dealings of the clothmaker and his workmen were regulated by statute. Charles Knight's "England" explains this clearly in connection with the Parliamentary Statute of Wages of 1495. In that fifteenth century there were no factories. Every manufacture was carried on at the houses of the workmen, in their several branches, and thus the operations of the clothiers, whether carders, spinners, weavers, fullers, shearmen, or dyers were combined though separate, by the tradesmen whose capital was engaged in cloth-making.

The simple indenture of apprenticeship if one considers the customs of the city of London at that time, and the customs also of the Company in relation to *them*, yields some additional points of information about John Perry, the second. London did not admit to full franchises as a "*freeman*" that is, to full civic rights of citizenship, any man, until he had become twenty-four years old, and the Craft-Guilds were such prominent factors in the municipal life, and action, that admission to the full freemanship of any of these Guilds was also simultaneously and consequently an admission to the freedom of the city and so the indenture of apprentice in the Companies was always so drawn, in point of time, that the day of his Craft-freedom should fall on the opening day of his twenty-fifth year. The time, usually seven years—but was often more—may sometimes have been less. Therefore it may be inferred that the birthday of John Perry fell in November, 1604, and that he became in the technical sense, cloth-worker and citizen of London in November, 1628, and this was the third year of Charles the First. In due time he married Johanna Holland, a daughter of Joseph Holland who was also a cloth-worker and citizen of London. These items were sent from England and published in the Genealogical Register in Boston, and also the last will and testament of Joseph Holland who died 1658.

He must have been a very prominent person in the old parish church of St. Sepulchre's and there seems to be some grounds for believing that that particular Guild of Cloth-workers, had special powers, or interests in this ancient church which dates from the time of the Crusades, and is the most interesting of the one hundred churches whose restorations were superintended by Sir Christopher Wren. Americans at any rate are drawn toward it as to no other of the Parish churches in London. Capt. John Smith is buried in its crypt, and Benjamin Franklin wrought as a journeyman printer within a stone's throw of its porch, and John Rogers, the martyr, was burned at the stake at

Smithfield, the still open space between St. Bartholomew's and St. Sepulchre.

Joseph Holland in his will of 1659 directed without question where he should be buried: "on the south side of the christening pew between my two former wives." He left bequests to his son-in-law, John Perry, and Johanna, his wife, and their children and to "my son, Nathaniel Holland of Watertown, New England," 20 lbs. in goods. This means Watertown on the Charles River in Massachusetts, where Nathaniel was a freeman in 1663. He had by wife Mary, a son Joseph, born Oct. 24, 1659, named from his grandfather.

Eight years after this, Sept. 2nd, occurred the great fire of London, which raged four days and reduced the city to ashes from the Tower to the Temple—thirteen hundred houses and ninety churches were destroyed. St. Sepulchre was in its path and almost totally destroyed by it, but parishioners set themselves energetically to work and in four years it was rebuilt and beautified within and without. The old verger, probably from plans preserved, knew nearly the location of the christening pew. Late in that autumn or early the following year, John Perry came to Watertown bringing his family with him. He died in 1674. We come now to the third John Perry in direct descent.

Why did these Perry's, father and son, look across the ocean to Watertown in New England, when they found themselves burned out and impoverished in London? There are many reasons I think for this. He had an own brother two years younger, a tailor and weaver like the rest, who came to Massachusetts in 1638 and in 1640 removed to Watertown. And had certainly six children named in his will. He died Sept. 9, 1683, aged seventy-seven years. After almost thirty years of separation by the ocean, the elder brother would naturally be drawn to the younger, and from the decaying Old World, to the growing New. At any rate, the two, father and son, always in that family *Father and Son*, came to Watertown; the father to find a grave

there in a few years and the son to spend a long life and rear a large family there.

This third John Perry who had probably served his apprenticeship to the Cloth-workers Guild, and who wrought at that craft in Watertown, as did all his relatives, married there, when she had just turned eighteen, Sarah Clary, Dec. 13, 1667. Sarah Clary Perry was still living in Cambridge adjoining Watertown with her eldest son John, so late as February, 1725, when she was in her seventy-seventh year. The date of her husband's death is not recorded, but the names of their nine children on record, are every one of them family names in their Grandfather Holland or Grandfather Perry's families. Their eldest son John had eight children, and *his* eldest son John had nine. To John Perry and Sarah Clary was born in Watertown, Nov. 28, 1684, Josiah Perry; he was their seventh child. Two others were afterward added to the family. Josiah Perry married Jan. 12, 1708, Bethia Cutler (or Cutter) and they had ten children, all born in Watertown. He was a tailor and weaver like the rest that went before and followed after him. After a time there was a cessation of hostilities between the French and English in New England and there came a call to the towns along the Charles river for recruits to come to the "Heart of the Commonwealth;" Worcester's *first* and *second* settlements had been entirely broken up by the Indians in the interests of the French, and the *third attempt* was well under way when a movement westward was made by some of the colony in the interval from 1748-1754; so in accordance with this theory, Josiah Perry and his son Nathan who was born in Watertown in 1718, a year in which many Scotch-Irish settled in Worcester, bought the land I have already spoken of on Sagatabscot Hill, now Vernon St., Union Hill. The original farm was purchased of Elijah Hedge and was held in the joint names of Josiah and Nathan Perry. The father, sixty-six, and the son, thirty-three years of age, dwelt together as long as the family remained in one place. This

would tend to make the family more influential than it otherwise would have been, as they dwelt in harmony and love. This land was near the northwestern slope of the hill just west of the original lot of Digory Sargeant, who settled there and tried to maintain his footing after every other settler had gone away, even after the Boston authorities had urged him to go. He was killed by the Indians and his wife tomahawked, and his five children carried to Canada. Some of them afterward returned to occupy the eighty-acre lot of their father. Settling as the Perrys did so near the stirring events and traditions of the town, they must have made a deep impression on the life of Nathan, to whom, now we have come in line of descent.

The oak on the northern point of this hill at the foot of which Capt. Howe of Marlboro, and twelve armed men, it is said, buried Digory Sargeant in 1704 cannot now be located, but the present homestead of the Perrys occupies precisely the site of the original home of 1751, though rebuilt and enlarged several times since its first building.

Nathan Perry *tailor* and *weaver* like his progenitors, deacon, as were his *son* and *grandson* in succession, married in 1745 Hannah Fiske, daughter of Dea. Nathan Fiske of Watertown, and three children were born in Watertown, and five more after they came to Worcester. He devoted himself assiduously from the first, to his *loom*, his *farm*, his *church duties*, and his *civic responsibilities*. He was Deacon twenty-three years in the old South Church. He was very prominent in all town and County matters; he was treasurer of the County fifteen years, and Treasurer of the Town at the same time, and a Notary Public for many years. By the bold stand he took in 1775, in favor of resisting the Crown and opposing the unjust taxation he became possessed in a remarkable degree of the confidence of his fellow citizens, and his brother church members, and his word went a long way in settling disputes, and quarrels and in keeping the peace. He was very strict in observing the Sabbath, which at that time

began at sundown on Saturday night. I was amazed to learn that he was familiar with "short hand" and many times took the sermon on Sunday in "short hand."

Consulting the town records of Worcester, I find in 1761, he is called Constable Perry, also Warden Nathan Perry, and in a list of names who were drawn as jurors Jan. 4, 1757, I find the name of Nathan Perry. March 1760, I find his name on list of Assessors, Surveyors, Collectors of Taxes and Selectmen. May 26, 1769, it was voted that James Goodwin, Jacob Chamberlin and Nathan Perry be a Committee to settle accounts with the Town Treasurer, which must have been previous to his own appointment.

On the completion of the Old South Church and the sale of the choice of pews, March, 1764, he had the fortieth choice, and took pew No. 10. He was also surveyor and collector of taxes again in 1768 and 1769, he was on a Committee to settle accounts with the Town Treasurer—also on a Committee to provide a school-master. In 1770 it was voted that Nathan Perry be asked to sit in the Elder's seats to assist those already seated there in leading "ye congregation in singing."

In 1771 and '72 we find his name on list of jurors, and on Committee to examine Treasurer's report. In 1773 and 1774 Thaddeus Maccarty receives all of his salary from Nathan Perry, Town Treasurer. In August, 1774, a town meeting was held at which he was chosen moderator, and he and thirteen others were empowered to survey and collect taxes, and later he with Stephen Salisbury and Timothy Bigelow were a committee to settle accounts with the Town Treasurer, and June 21st, 1776, he received salary to date, as Town Treasurer, and in 1774 was moderator of meeting in which they held a debate on the doings of the Continental Congress, and a committee of twelve was chosen to decide what should be done in the matter. They reported to uphold the Congress and coöperate with it and the report was signed by each of the twelve, Nathan Perry being one of the number.

In 1772 he served as a juror and in 1773 he built a fence around the burying-ground, and was agent with Wm. Young, to fix the lines and boundaries of the parish to be formed from *Leicester*, portions of *Worcester* and *Sutton*; was surveyor of highways and collector of taxes, and with two others to receive and collect subscriptions for the salary of Mr. Macarty. Some years previous to this, it was considered whether the road between his land and Mr. Tyrus Rice should be discontinued and it was voted—No! In 1775 they voted to accept the instructions of the Continental Congress and he was then called Lieutenant Nathan Perry; he was called to assess damages for laying out a road, but we are not informed *where* the road went. Then, collectors were ordered to pay all monies in their hands to the Town Treasurer. In 1776 the instructions were the same, and his name was also in the list of jurors. It was voted that all persons must comply with the orders of Thomas Wheeler, Nathan Perry and Robert Smith in arranging and setting their horse stables. I suspect this was to apply to locating the sheds for horses at the back of the church for sheltering their teams when the people came to church on Sunday. In September of the same year, a County Treasurer was voted for and he had twenty-nine votes; Stephen Salisbury six, and Wm. Young two. The vote not being unanimous, in November, same year, another vote was taken and he had forty-nine votes and was declared elected *County* Treasurer. In March, 1777, he with seven others were chosen "Overseers of the Poor" and he was appointed a "Committee of Correspondence" of Worcester. I find some quaint records like the following:—"Voted that Nathan Perry be Moderator of our next Town meeting if he shall be chosen to that office, if not then Josiah Pierce shall preside." From Albert A. Lovell's "*Worcester in the Revolution*" we learn that Aug. 22 a meeting was called at which he was chosen Moderator.

In 1779, it was voted that Nathan Perry, Samuel Goddard and Samuel Whitney be a committee to make proper provision

for the families of non-commissioned officers and soldiers serving for this town in the Continental Army, argeeable to the resolves of the Court.

In 1780, the town voted to allow him pay for seven yards of tow cloth and making shirts for John Spence, a poor man; also voted to pay for iron found for "ye bell"—and time and expense about "ye bell"—84 days, 18s., 1d.

March 12, 1781, Josiah Perry and James Barber were chosen tythingmen; April 28, 1783, "we, the subscribers, have met and perambulated the line between Worcester and Ward," signed Nathan Perry, Josiah Perry. Auburn was formerly called Ward. Nathan Perry had sixty votes for County Treasurer and was elected in 1777; he was one of a committee of seven to draw money to pay soldiers' bounty, and he and Wm. Young to be agents for the business, he with Benj. Stowel, and Sam. Brown were chosen to procure money to pay the men in service in the Continental army, and to find out on what terms they will enlist in Continental Army. Three were chosen to examine accounts and see how much money is needed to settle accounts. In 1783 was chosen a Selectman of Worcester, and moderator of meetings, and it was voted to pay him for boarding Katherine Curtis, and sundries, 11b.-18s.-6d. Our next report of him is two years later, he was allowed 4lbs.-1s.-6d. for doing business for the town. In 1784 he with several others asked the town "to consider a petition in regard to having the Fore-seat taken out on the women's side of the meeting-house in order that some aged women may have the privilege of setting their chairs in room of *said seat*." Voted, that a committee chosen to procure some person to preach on Probation, be continued in office and that two be added to them, then they chose Deacon Jacob Camberlain and Deacon Nathan Perry, and at a meeting continued by adjournment to the 29th of November, 1784, the following votes were passed:

Voted "not to grant the prayer of the Petition mentioned

in Art. 5. For the town to take into consideration the petition of Dea. Nathan Perry and others in regard to having the Fore-seat taken out on the women's side in order that some aged women may have the privilege of sitting in their chairs in room of *said seats*."

In 1785 he was chosen Grand juror, and it was voted that he build a tomb where the selectmen decide. There was in the Old Chest, that Mrs. Nutt described in her paper on "Old Furniture," that had been in the Perry attic at the old homestead all these years, an old religious work written by Henry Gibbs, A. M., pastor of the First Church of Christ in Watertown, and "printed in 1721 in Boston, at the corner shop opposite the Brick Meeting House in Cornhill."

It having been written by the pastor of their own church was probably the reason of the purchase of the book. On the fly leaf in front was written "Josiah Perry—His Book" Lower down on same leaf "Nathan Perry—His Book, Given him by his father in ye year 1750," the covers were wooden covered with leather, on the fly leaves at the back of the book, (there were three of them) was kept a Family record .. The first record was "March ye third 1670." A relative who wanted a copy had them photographed to preserve them as many were almost illegible, the paper so yellow and poor.

I also have part of his account book, beginning February, 1765, and giving the orders for weaving, everything: all wool, Tow cloth for shirts, coverlids, blankets, linen. I have brought down many samples of their work on the old loom, which the ladies present can examine if they wish. The book referred to contains a curious mixture of orders and charges: Flaxseed, Butter, Potatoes, Lent three skeins of tow, also one barrel of "cyder," in August, 1775 is charged to Mr. Maccarty and again Nov. 4. 1775. another charge to Mr. Maccarty for six barrels of "cyder."

The "Mill House" where the weaving was done was one side of the cider mill where he ground the apples for cider. The mice made bad work of his account book but a great deal of it can now be made out and considering its age, one

hundred and forty-two years, is very legible, nothing was wasted in that family or thrown away, which accounts for the collection that went into the "Old Chest" branded "1625." With all his other good qualities Nathan Perry possessed a fund of good humor, and could appreciate a joke, as well as any one. One of the neighbors interested in learning to weave all sorts of things came into the house one morning and said in his hearing rather boastingly, "*I have learned to weave everything.*" With a twinkle in his eye he asked, "Can you weave leather breeches?"

Nothing for the *good* of the *church* or *community* transpired without his wisdom, good judgment and approval. He was loved, respected, trusted, and honored. He served as Deacon as long as he lived from 1783 till he died, twenty-three years. He was chosen Treasurer of the County in the opening year of the war, and filled that position till 1790, fifteen years. He died in 1806, and gave the Homestead on the Hill to his son Moses and a place he bought in Quinsigamond to his son Josiah.

My uncle, Dea. Samuel Perry, on his fiftieth anniversary, writes: this evening is to me an eventful time; it calls to mind past events of great magnitude. My memory reaches back over seventy years" I remember when my Grandfather lived he was highly respected and filled many important offices in church and town—*Church, Town and County* Treasurer, Deacon of the only church in Worcester. Sitting with his book in the sun to assist his glasses, he remarked to a friend who came to see him, that he "was pretty well, but not worth a copper to work." I believe he often took the sermon in "*short hand*" on the Sabbath, no doubt to think it over and recall it to memory during the week. He was very strict in observing the Sabbath. His wife, my Grandmother, was Hannah Fiske, daughter of Dea. Nathan Fiske, of Watertown. Her memory deserves *more* than a sketch of my pen. Quiet, exemplary, religious, when Saturday night approached, at sunset her work was laid aside, the quiet family looked forward to the approaching Sabbath

with reverence. Her word to us as counsel was—"Do nothing but that which you would be willing all the world should know." As good advice *now*, for us to follow, as it was then

Nathan's youngest son, Moses, married Marcy Clarke, a descendant of John Clarke, a Scotch Irish immigrant to Worcester in 1718. She had one daughter and died within a year. After living five years a widower he married Hannah Hall, living with her fifty years and she outlived him some twenty years. He inherited the Homestead and the declining business as a weaver. At this time there were years of internal strife in Worcester as well as all over the country. Every industry was injured, Schools were broken up, and it is said he had only six weeks of schooling, and yet he was an intelligent, far-seeing man. He was wise, frugal, industrious, and prosperous. He was consulted and revered by the church and community, as was his father Nathan. In after years his son, Samuel, speaking of him, said, "He was of more than common intellect, mild in government, just and honest in all his dealings, affectionate to his children and his grandchildren."

Moses was Deacon of the Old South Church thirty-five years, Union Church six years and Samuel held the same office in Union Church, making ninety-nine years of Deaconship by father, son, and grandson. Three of Moses' sons were educated for the ministry and were successful. One lived to be eighty and died suddenly while going to conduct a preaching service on the Sabbath. The late Geo. Bancroft was class-mate of his oldest son, Baxter, at Harvard, and often visited at the Perry home. While U. S. Minister to Berlin, Baxter died, and Mr. Bancroft wrote an obituary on his death. He speaks most highly of his relation as citizen, neighbor, husband and father, of his duties to church and community. As one was entirely Orthodox and the other Unitarian, their friendship and love was truly remarkable. Two of the sons were farmers: one located in New York and was Deacon in the church where he attended twenty-five years; Samuel inherited the

Homestead, and like his father, had little schooling. He was Captain of Massachusetts State Militia, and kept that title till chosen Deacon. He and his father were two charter members of the Union Church when founded. He was liberal in giving and helped to show that the church stood for righteousness and truth. He was humble, gave liberally to the poor, the sick, and especially the widow. One of his sons, David Brainerd, was educated for the ministry, went west, as a home missionary, and is now *President* of *Doane College* at Crete, Nebraska.

It is said of Moses Perry, being a strong advocate of temperance at a meeting held to promote the cause, he made a strong, effective plea for "no license." As he closed, some one arose and said that that would be depriving us of our liberty!! As he stood for *liberty* as well as *temperance*, he reflected a moment, then replied, "I don't *want* liberty to do wrong!!"

At another time in a church meeting, some matter was being discussed and the arguments waxed warm—he arose and said, "Brethren, this debate is getting too warm; I think we had better go home, and I shall set the example," and he took his hat and went out.

In 1895, H. H. Chamberlain, an aged citizen, had an item in the *Spy* about closing the road as it ran diagonally across the common, and said "even the meek Moses Perry was offended." At a meeting called to see what was to be done, he listened quietly awhile, then said, "We want a *way* to get through; give us a street, and you may make a swamp of the common, lay it down to pasture, or plow it all into ridges as it is now." This was before Salem street was cut through, and they were going to survey for a street there.

As we began our story by "looking backward" I cannot well leave it without "looking forward" a little, and noting the change in the "Old Homestead." We had been much interested in trying to find out, just *when* the present house standing on the hill was built, but nothing in the attic could

give us any clue to the *time* of building. Two years ago a cousin sent me a letter written by *my mother* to one of her brother's in college. It is *unique* and *interesting*. I quote from it:

June 23rd, 1823

Dear Brother

According to your request I sit down almost for the first time to-day to write you all the news I can think of. I can assure you we live very comfortably in the *shop*, indeed, I think never more so, except the milk and cheese tho' it makes the work some harder. The house was raised June 11, but the carpenters did not come to work, till a week afterward; in the meantime farming, and other work went briskly, bricks were carted, &c.

At present 4 carpenters, 5 or 6 masons, 1 man hired for a fortnight, Sereno and 2 others compose our family; six masons make business ache, are building an arch up under the floor, it is a beauty, began it this morning. The house is partly shingled and the outside covered with rough boards. I can't tell how it looks now but I think it will look very well for a farm house. Much of the work comes on *Sam*, notwithstanding I feel contented and in a measure happy.

If solid happiness we prize,
Within our breasts the jewel lies;

Find our little oven out in the lane *quite convenient*, much more so than to go to the neighbors to bake. Mary says she thinks you will be disappointed if you think we live in a heap (she was here when we raised) but no matter for that; O, Sam says he can't stay to *think*, much less *write*, he and father were helpers, and says, he does not think the horse can be spared, so David must come down with "The Post." It don't signify for me to write here. I have supper to get for *sixteen*,

So Adieu—Matilda Perry.

Samuel had ten children by wife Mary Harrington; all lived to man and womanhood; all married and had families

but one; an older daughter, the last custodian of the treasures in the attic which she held almost sacred. She was the *poetess* of the family. Every new member by birth or marriage or death, was chronicled by her verse, and in closing, I cannot do better than to give you *her version* of the *changes* at the Old Homestead on the Hill.

June 23rd, 1889.

All things must have their day,
The old must pass away,
The new must take their place
With more æsthetic grace.
But they too, cannot stay,—
They too, must pass away
Whether we care or not,
This is the common lot.

What is the power by which we trace?
What is not! but had once a place;
As in a picture, lo! I gaze
On by-gones of my youthful days.
The stumps upon the Northern Hill
Are standing in my vision still;
The remnants of that forest band,
Which crowned of old the rising land.

There was a little pond below,
Where bright eyed frogs moved to and fro;
And chestnut trees to children dear,
Stood with their autumn harvests near;
But nearer to the house, I see
The form and fruit of many a tree.

The south wild cherry where the vine,
Did with old boughs their stems entwine;
The Butternut of which father said
Ten bushels we should have instead,
If we would let him cut the tree;
'Twas cut!! but not a nut had we.

Still in my vision do I hold
The mill-house as in days of old;
Its half worn frame—its vacant room,
The chimney fire-place—and the loom,
There did our busy grandsires, throw
The smooth brown shuttle to and fro.

I see the cider apples ground;
The patient horse goes round and round.
The fruit well crushed beneath the nuts

Is swept by paddles from the ruts.
Now in the press, crushed more and more,
It yields at last its fruity store.
And the sweet juice, the children sip
Through straws, drawn upward to the lip.

But shop and mill have passed away
With all the buildings of that day
Save the old house; which from the hill
Looks out on old Wachusett still;
And sees the city's widening reign,
Encroaching on her old domain.—

The old well—roofed and painted red—
To which dear farewell words were said—
When to its long familiar face
A new successor took its place.
O well! with waters cold and deep
Now resting in untroubled sleep,
What worthy tributes to thy praise
They gave thee in the by-gone days.

With large, sweet fruit of deepest red,
The English tree its branches spread.
And other cherries, black and white
In quick succession move in sight.

Six stately pears! whose branches high
Filled with white bloom their space of sky,
Whose hard green fruit grew soft and sweet
In the brick oven's vanished heat.
All passed—but left of all your race,
One dwarfed successor in their place.

I see the large high sweeting's crest
With trunk where *blue-birds* made their nests;
When with a "*thud*" it struck the ground
My heart gave back responsive sound.
Perhaps the hind-barn sweeting's twain,
Did for my sake *awhile remain*;
I passed when they had bowed to fate
And found their places desolate.

Close to the ancient cow-yard fence,
A garden lay, of small pretence;
Its bloom belonged to earlier time,
And ere my day, had passed its prime.
Currants were there, both sweet and sour;
And lilacs that forgot to flower.

Near by it, stood a stately pear,
Filled in the spring with blossoms rare.
And—smile not—on its border land,
A small brick smoking house did stand.

The fathers who prepared our way,
Were not æsthetic in their day;
They earned by daily toil their bread,
And *larger* households clothed and fed,
In simple arts and ways content,
With little of embellishment.

Just where the long brown swinging gate
Did on its owner's pleasure wait,
The golden hearted roses grew,
With leaves of richest crimson hue.
The old brown gate and fence passed by,
A fence, white pointed meets the eye.

In the Front yard, a garden stands
Enclosed in semi-circling bands;
Its beds, in fairy forms were laid,
Bordered by box of greenest shade.
Brown pathways wound their way between,
Fair contrast with those rows of green;

Old-fashioned plants from year to year
Grew in the self same places here;
And other blooms of later naine,
In the spring morning duly came.

'Twas a hard task to plant and weed,
But the fair sight, repaid the deed;
The plants are scattered now, or dead;
The blooms make bright some later bed,
But O, dear lily of the vale,
The loss of thy dear face I wail.

We seemed upon our native hill
Awhile insured from many an ill;
But as from change to change we tread,
With friends estranged, and kindred dead,
We find ourselves prepared or not,
Partakers of the common lot.

They would not bear the searching gaze
Of the same Century's later days.
The age moved on to lighter grace
Sometimes too rapid in its race,
Sometimes perchance, it swept *too fast*
The dear old landmarks of the past.

But dear Old Homestead! lifelong friend
Must you to Fate remorseless bend?
Must strangers o'er the threshold tread
Making the old home theirs instead?
Must alien faith, and foreign birth
Possess this hallowed spot of earth?

Strangers and aliens did I say?
And are we made of finer clay?
Swedes, Irish are we not one blood,
Children of one Creator—God?

All lands are *His* beneath the skies
And why should *we* monopolize?
All policies are in *His* hands;
And to all depths, His title stands.

Less need for sickle or the plow
About the ancient Homestead now,
They came from way across the sea,
Our neighbors and our friends to be;
And space which once our father's tilled,
This sacred land of home is filled.

Here the old Grandsire and the Grandame died
Father and Mother their Death slumber slept.
Here brought their youngest son his fair young bride;
And pledged his vows, and merry festal kept.

Here were their children born, ten boys and girls;
Here were their fair young years together spent
In laughter and in careless sport, and noise,
And to their schoolhouse day by day, they went.

Years cannot stay the changes; let them come.
Yea, that *last change*, that changes all the rest,
When I am ripened for a fairer home;
For God's pure presence and the promised rest.

I shall go in at Winter's time no more
To the old room, with warmth and brightness filled;
Where busy brains the school task pondered o'er,
Or fancy work was wrought with fingers skilled.

I shall not see beside the marble stand
Mother and daughter o'er their sewing bent,
Nor yet the father holding in his hand
His daily paper, on the news intent.

I shall not hear their voices as of old;
Ah me! the opening of a noisy door
Would be as music if it only told
That here they lived as in the days of yore.

I shall not hear the moving of their feet,
Climbing the stairs or passing through the hall;
And nevermore upon my quiet seat,
The sound of voices on my ears shall fall.

Yes they have trod to-day the ancestral floors,
They sleep to-night within the ancestral walls;
But two more nights, and lo! they close the doors,
On the old Home life, and the curtain falls.

The Home life vanishes before my face;
The Present hastens from my grasping hand;
It hastens by, and scarce leaves farther trace
Than wind-swept ruins, in the shifting sands.

How like a dream the years have hastened by;
A few more hours dissolves this Household band.
The youngest son departs, and only *I*,
The last of many in the Homestead stand.

June 23rd, 1889.

On motion of Mr. Forehand, a vote of thanks was extended Mrs. Hildreth for her valuable paper.

MEMORIAL TO DR. FRANCIS BRICK.

Dr. Brick was admitted to membership in the Worcester Society of Antiquity July 1, 1890, and always manifested a deep interest in the objects and work of the organization. Although the duties attending his profession prevented his giving as much time to its meetings as he desired, his presence was frequently noted on the records of the Society. Dr. Brick came to Worcester in the year 1875, to take charge of the patients of Dr. W. B. Chamberlain, while the latter was given a period for rest, and travel abroad. Through this opportunity he was given an introduction to the people of Worcester, and his association with Dr. Chamberlain furnished a recommendation that was more or less helpful in establishing a lucrative practice, and gaining for himself the reputation of being "a good honest Brick." For that reason and the fact that he satisfied his patients and

their friends of his skill as a successful physician, he continued to enjoy their confidence throughout the period of his professional life, even up to the date of his death, which occurred on March 14, 1906. He was the son of Alfred H. Brick, and born in Gardner, Massachusetts, in the year 1838. The fact that several of his relatives took part in the War of the Revolution caused him to feel justly proud of his ancestral stock.

The family name was originally *Breck*, but like other colonial family names was changed without formality and for the past one hundred years has been known as Brick. The doctor was educated at the Cleveland Homeopathic College, graduating in 1861, and began his professional career in the town of Winchester, New Hampshire, but later removed to Keene, and from thence to Worcester, at which time he became interested in the local State and National Medical Societies, including the work of the Worcester Dispensary and Hospital Association. His opinions were highly thought of by the medical fraternity, and his demise was deeply felt, not only by the families to whom he was called to render professional service, but by his professional associates as well.

COPIED FROM CALEB BURBANK'S FAMILY BIBLE.

Abijah Burbank¹ and Molly Spring² were married Sept. 4, 1760. Abijah Burbank was born March 26, 1736. Mary Spring, his wife, was born March 22, 1741. Children were:

Caleb, born July 18, 1761.

Elijah, born December 18, 1762. (Married Bettey Gibbs November 21, 1782.)

Henry, born July 30, 1764.

Abijah, born March 3, 1766.

Mary, born December 3, 1767. (Married Samuel Goddard April 17, 1783.)

Silas, born September 19, 1769.

John, born January 11, 1771; died February 10, 1773.

Anna, born April 30, 1773; died September 30, 1773.

Anna
John } born September 22, 1774.

Judith, born March 11, 1777.

Daniel, born March 31, 1779.

Nathan, born November 7, 1781.

An infant babe died August 9, 1782.

Isaac, born April 17, 1784.

Infant babe, born August 6, 1789.

Mrs. Mary Burbank departed this life September 26, 1786.

Mr. Abijah Burbank died September 23, 1813.

Mrs. Mary Burbank, second wife of Mr. Abijah Burbank, died February 5, 1823. She was Mary Peirce; they were married February 21, 1788.

Caleb Burbank¹, born July 18, 1761.

Lucy Waters, born Sept. 27, 1765.

Caleb and Lucy Burbank married May 26, 1785.

Lucy Burbank, deceased Jan. 30, 1824.

Hannah Smith, born March 12, 1779.

Caleb and Hannah Burbank, married March 30, 1825.

Hannah Burbank died May 15, 1837.

Caleb Burbank died Dec. 9, 1849.

¹Abijah Burbank, senior, and his sons, Caleb and Elijah, were manufacturers of paper, 1776 to 1834.

²She was a Mary Spring of Weston, daughter of Henry and Abigail (Chadwick) Spring.

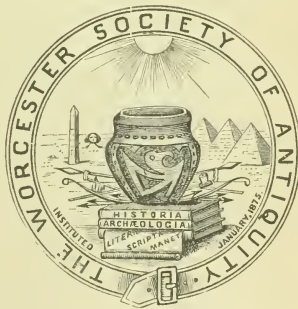
PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Worcester Society of Antiquity,

FOR THE YEAR 1907.

VOLUME XXIII.



Worcester, Mass.

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.

1908.

U. S. A. CXXXII.

CONTENTS

Proceedings Four Hundred and Twenty-eighth Meeting . . .	153
Report of the Field-day Trip to Gloucester	153
Proceedings Four Hundred and Twenty-ninth Meeting . . .	161
Thomas H. and Eliza Daniels Dodge	162
Family Records Copied from Stray Leaves of a Bible . . .	180

Gift

Amer. Anti. Soc.

'99

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND TWENTY-EIGHTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, JULY 2, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard in the chair. Others present, Messrs. Baldwin, Crane, Davidson, Eaton, Harlow, George Maynard, Raymenton, F. P. Rice, Sanford, Miss Moore, Miss May, Miss Manly, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Smith, Mrs. Williamson, Mrs. Chenowith and Miss Grover.

The Librarian reported additions during the month just closed: six hundred forty-four bound volumes, two hundred and fifty-three pamphlets, and fourteen articles for the Museum. Special mention was made of the gift from Thomas H. Dodge Esq., consisting of a handsomely bound volume, a memorial to his deceased wife. From Hon. William M. Olin, volume 14, Acts and Resolves of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay, 1747 to 1752, and from the Bureau of Ethnology, Washington, D. C., the 24th volume of its publications.

The financial report of the trip to Gloucester gave a balance on the credit side which amount was charged off to the account for printing notices.

The names of Florence D. Gilbert and John C. Stewart were presented by the Standing Committee on Nominations and they were elected to membership in this Society.

REPORT OF THE FIELD-DAY TRIP TO GLOUCESTER.

BY ELLERY B. CRANE.

We worldly mortals are at least supplied with two methods of photographing upon our memories the events with which we are intimately connected as we pass on over the journey of life. One is by pain, the other pleasure. Both methods

are perhaps essential, for it is conceded that we cannot have the rose without the thorn, but we may be sure that those mortals who can secure the rose and at the same time avoid the sting of the thorn, reap by far the larger share of real enjoyment as they traverse the path which they personally can do much to adorn and from which they may perhaps "snatch a grace beyond the reach of art."

If then, we can say truthfully, only pleasure attended our party on the Field-Day, Saturday, June 29th, 1907, one may add that it was the best one of all our previous outings. And that is saying a great deal, for many persons who have, during the past thirty years participated in the observance of the Society's outings, must carry most vivid recollections of the pleasant hours spent in visiting historic scenes and the profit of the information gained thereby.

The morning of the 29th gave promise for a fair day and the committee of arrangements had reason to hope for a large number to join them in season to take the special car attached to the train leaving the Union Station for Boston at 7 A. M.

The names of those constituting the party were; Mrs. Newton E. Burk, Mrs. Charles F. Darling, Mr. and Mrs. Charles B. Eaton, Mr. and Mrs. Frank E. Williamson, Miss Anna M. Moore, Duane B. Williams, Alderman and Mrs. George H. Coates, Julia Cushman, Mr. and Mrs. W. F. Cole, Mr. George M. Rice, Miss Abbie M. White, Miss Alice Foster, Mr. and Mrs. George E. Barrett, Miss Emma Barrett, Major William T. Harlow, Mrs. E. H. Crandall Jr., President Mander A. Maynard, Mr. and Mrs. J. Nelson Flagg, Mr. A. C. Munroe, Mr. and Mrs. Charles C. Baldwin, Mr. and Mrs. Smith, Miss Mary A. Smith, Miss Grover, Mr. George Calvin Rice, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Brannon, who joined the party on the arrival of our train at Gloucester, and to whom the writer of this report is greatly indebted for many interesting facts relating to the history of this delightful seaside resort.

The day selected proved perfection itself, and the only

discouraging feature of the event was the fact that so many of our members failed to improve such a favorable opportunity to visit one of the most charming spots on the coast line of our Commonwealth. Not a cloud was to be seen, the morning air was fresh and invigorating. The run to Boston was soon made, and the march to the elevated train gave no fatigue. Reaching the North Terminal, about twenty-five minutes was allowed for watching the throng of travelers going to and fro, some with a hurried step and anxious look, fearing their train had gone and left them; others moving, or perhaps sitting, with moderation everywhere apparent, only to express surprise when they learned their train had left the depot while they were waiting to take it.

Special cars were standing on track No. 3 and seats were taken in season to go on the train leaving Boston at twenty-five minutes past nine, arriving in Gloucester a few minutes over one hour later. Here the Boston & Northern Street Railway Company had special cars in readiness, and after greeting our good friends Mr. and Mrs. Brannon we started on our trolley ride around the Cape to be refreshed and our appetites sharpened by the cooling sea breeze, our stock of historical knowledge enlarged by the sights we were to see and the information to be gathered.

Unlike many of the early settled towns in Massachusetts, Gloucester still retains many of the lineal descendants of her old families, and they are now found under the same roofs that for generation after generation has given them shelter.

Our course at first led in the direction of West Gloucester. After a short ride a halt was made in the vicinity of Ten-pound light, while a number of the party inspected the remains of the old fort, constructed for protection of the town during the Revolutionary war and may have been brought into service during the attack made by the crew of the "Falcon," Aug. 8, 1775, at which time the town was bombarded. The fire was chiefly directed at the meeting-

house and worked considerable damage to that building. Capt. Joseph Rogers with his company of minute-men assisted by Col. Joseph Foster, met the enemy, captured four boats, a small tender, a prize schooner, and forty men, and compelled the "Falcon" to withdraw. Two Americans, Lurvey and Rowe, also two British seamen were killed in the engagement.

Again the town was assailed, Sept. 8, 1814, by the British frigate "Tenedos," resulting in a loss to the British of a barge and thirteen men, when the man-of-war retired.

Our next halt was made at the Ellery House, a quaint product of ye olden time. It was built about the year 1704, by Rev. John White, and plainly carries the marks of great age. Its exceedingly low ceilings, mammoth fireplaces, old furniture, antique pictures on the walls, all remind one of the period of the Revolution when the patriotic services of William Ellery, signer of the Declaration of American Independence, were enacted; who was a descendant of William Ellery the progenitor in New England of this same family, who for so many generations have gone in and out of this stately old dwelling. But of that first company to locate on this territory, who planted themselves here in 1624, we have little to say except that they came from Dorchester, England, for the purpose of fishing and to trade with the Indians, and after a few years removed to Salem. The location was then occupied by the Rev. Richard Blyndman and his followers, who, it is reported, came from Green Harbor, a place in Plymouth, England. The name Gloucester was given to this settlement in 1642 by the General Court of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay.

Stepping out of the old Ellery Home we resumed our places in the trolley and proceeded toward Annisquam, halting once on our way, to walk a short distance to gain a better view of the charming bay and scramble over some of the huge granite boulders that make this locality so famous. The name Annisquam is a compound word Annis and Quom, or

Squam, (the Indian name for harbor or location), indicating the harbor of Ann or Cape Ann. Our next stop was for dinner at the Grand View, J. L. Publicover, proprietor. Here, after another short walk, we were pleasantly received and not only given comfortable quarters but a good dinner, after which we returned to the trolley to continue our circuit of the Cape.

Our course ran almost continuously within full view of the bay and through Pigeon Hill, Bay View, and Lanesville. Just as we came opposite the point of land bearing the proud name, Cape Ann, the car was stopped, and Mr. and Mrs. Brannon invited the party to accompany them to their cottage where they were introduced to a generous supply of lemonade, served by their daughters; also a wide-spreading view from the veranda out upon the Atlantic ocean, which reaches out its arms, 3,000 miles away to the coast of Spain.

As our trolley car came to a stop in front of the cottage Mr. A. C. Munroe, wishing to catch an early train for Boston in season to there connect for Falmouth, where he desired to stop for the night, a son of Mr. Brannon came out with his auto and landed him in Rockport in season to make the trip.

Renewing our ride, with Mr. and Mrs. Brannon again with us, we came to Pigeon Cove where we halted to view the spot where the United States Government is constructing a breakwater, in order to form what is termed "Sandy Bay Harbor of Refuge." The work was commenced twenty-two years ago, about one million tons of stone has been used at an expense of about one million dollars, and at the present time the top of the work can only be seen at low tide.

The original estimates were, *total length of work* 9,000 feet, cost, five millions of dollars, amount of stone required, 6,301,407 tons, area enclosed for anchorage, 1,379 acres. The object is to furnish a safe anchorage for vessels overtaken by a storm on this coast, also a place where the North Atlantic Squadron of war vessels could find a home during certain seasons of the year.

At the southerly end of the breakwater may be seen Straitsmouth Island, which was visited by Samuel D. Champlain in 1605, by Capt. John Smith in 1614, and granted by the General Court in 1699 to Capt. James Davis for valuable services and expenditures in the French and Indian War. His descendants sold this island in 1795 to Capt. Francis Pool, for 176 pounds lawful money. This island is now owned by the United States Government and a lighthouse maintained there. At the base of the old breakwater and next to what is known as Bearskin's Neck, once stood an old fort and was the scene of the encounter between the "Sea Fencibles" and English gunboats in the war of 1812. Passing on our way, off the shore of Rockport may be seen Thatcher's Island. This was also visited by Champlain in 1605, and Captain Smith in 1614. Mr. Thatcher called the island "Thatcher's Woe" on account of a fearful wreck which occurred here in August 1635, at which time a vessel with twenty-three persons on board was driven by a severe gale of wind upon the rocky shore of this island and out of the number only Mr. Thatcher and his wife were saved.

The Colonial Government purchased this island of the heirs of Joseph Allen for 500 pounds in 1771. The Cape Ann lights are maintained there.

Rockport seemed to be properly named for there were quantities of rocks underneath and all about the place, in every conceivable shape and size, in order and disorder. Great pits have been excavated in these granite rock beds by the quarrymen, who find a ready market for their product. It is worth a visit to see these famous quarries, and the manner in which great blocks of granite are handled for shipment to various parts of this country, means of transportation being both by vessel and railway. The remark has been made more than once, that "if our forefathers had not been dropped (as it were) just upon this particular rockbound coast, this portion of our country would never have been settled by white men." How little the author of that remark under-

stood the situation; for the settlers upon these rock-ribbed shores are to-day drawing fortunes from those once thought to be, unproductive fields, and frowning ledges.

Among the historical items connected with Gloucester, we find that here under the preaching of Rev. John Murray (who was the first teacher of that denomination to make himself heard in Massachusetts), the first Universalist Society was formed in 1774, and in 1792 was incorporated by the legislature as the Independent Christian Society.

Back upon the highlands between Annisquam and Rockport, may be seen what is called the Dogtown Commons, where the fishermen first built their huts. Old cellar holes mark the spot where once stood the homes of those early settlers. Dogs were kept to give the alarm and protect the women and children while the men were off in their boats fishing. Hence the title "Dog Commons."

Another old colonial custom is still kept fresh and green in this interesting town: *The granting of cow-rights*.

Certain towns set apart lands for pasturing the settlers' cows, and definite limits were granted certain persons for that purpose. Those rights passing on down the line of heirs, and the only way by which that pasture land could be put to any other use would be the concentration of all the individual claims into one, by purchase or otherwise. While viewing the new government breakwater we were standing upon some of the very land held under the title of cow-rights.

Our courteous conductor, J. P. Daniels, and our experienced motorman, Stephen Doucette, planned to bring their car with its precious freight to a stand in front of the station in season for the party to board the train for Boston, leaving Gloucester at five minutes past five, on our return home. Special cars were at our service; the North Terminal soon reached, and a few moments later we were partaking of a luncheon at the South Terminal Station. Leaving there on the eight o'clock express train for Worcester we arrived at Union Station promptly on time without a hitch or a

break in the program from start to finish, with everyone in so far as heard from, expressing pleasure at the result of their Field-Day trip to old Gloucester.

A vote of thanks was extended Mr. Crane for his interesting paper.



FROM PHOTOGRAPH OF THOS. H. DODGE
TAKEN ABOUT FIFTY YEARS AGO.

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED TWENTY-NINTH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, SEPTEMBER 3, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present, Messrs. Baldwin, Burleigh, Crane, Davidson, George Maynard, Smith, Williamson, A. V. Hill, Mrs. Baldwin, Mrs. Darling, Mrs. Hildreth, Mrs. Williamson.

The following additions since the last meeting were reported by the Librarian; twenty-nine bound volumes, two hundred and seventeen pamphlets and one article for the Museum.

Special attention was called to the donations from Mrs. Charles A. Merrill and E. Stuart Dickinson, of books and pamphlets. From Thomas H. Dodge Esq., portrait in oil, of his deceased wife and also one of himself.

The following names having been presented by the Standing Committee on Nominations, Stephen Sawyer, Silas Newton, Mrs. Ella C. Newton, David A. Matthews, Samuel H. Longley, Daniel Q. Beede, William C. Barnard, Mrs. Newton E. Burk, they were elected members of this Society.

The President announced the death of Mr. Eugene Moriarty, Editor of the *Evening Post*, which occurred August 2. He recently became a member of this Society.

The Secretary read a communication from the Burritt Memorial Auxiliary Committee, it being an appeal for funds with which to erect a memorial in New Britain, Connecticut, to Elihu Burritt, the learned blacksmith, and a native of that town.

As Mr. Burritt was for a number of years a resident of Worcester, well and favorably known, and where he found opportunity as well as special advantages for the prosecution

of investigation and study which contributed so much toward his world-wide reputation and notability, there was great interest expressed in the cause by the various speakers in their discussions of the subject, following the reading of the appeal. And on account of his having been an Honorary Member of this Society, the matter was referred to a committee with power to act; the committee to be appointed by the President at a future meeting.

Treasurer Williamson made a statement in explanation of the action taken by the Executive Board in behalf of the Society in providing a memorial stone, to be placed in the Cape Cod Pilgrim Monument, when erected at Provincetown, Massachusetts. Various cities and towns within the commonwealth had been asked to contribute a granite block, properly inscribed with the name of the city or town donating the same, to be conspicuously placed in the walls of the monument, thus showing the public interest expressed in the erection of this "memorial to the Pilgrim Fathers."

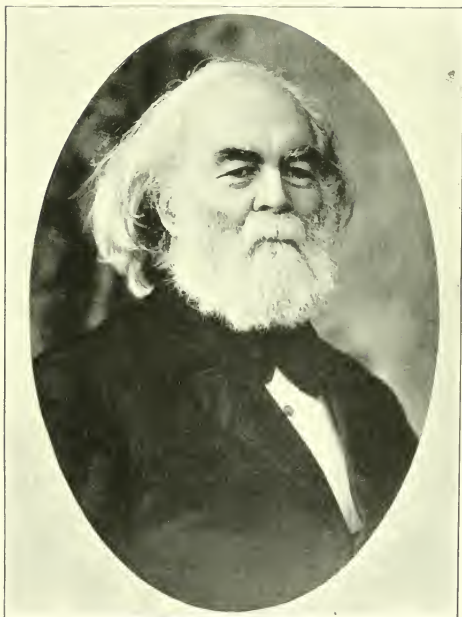
The City Council of Worcester not finding sufficient legal authority authorizing the expenditure of public funds for such a purpose, reported "inexpedient to act"; but the matter was brought to the attention of the Executive Board of this Society and the order was immediately given for a granite block properly inscribed to be prepared and it is expected that the name of Worcester shall appear by the side of the names of other cities and towns, when that historic structure shall have been erected.

The paper announced for the evening was read at the unveiling of the portraits of Thomas and Eliza Daniels Dodge.

THOMAS H. AND ELIZA DANIELS DODGE.

BY ELLERY B. CRANE.

Forty-three years ago, Mr. and Mrs. Thomas H. Dodge came to make the city of Worcester their home. For about nine years prior to removing to our city, their residence had



THOMAS H. DODGE

been in Washington, D. C., where amid the exciting scenes of that great political metropolis, surrounded by prominent and influential men called together for the express purpose of directing the movements for enacting, regulating and administering the measures that appertain to our national life, Mr. Dodge having been called there in 1855, to take part in the work of one of the branches of that ponderous political machine.

There was no blare of trumpets, when this man of national distinction and reputation purchased the house at the corner of Main and Chandler streets and announced it as his residence. And from that day to the present moment the same quiet, modest, straight-forward deportment has been maintained in the family, and aside from seeing their forms upon our streets, the people of Worcester might never know of the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Dodge, were it not for the help of the public press calling attention to their numerous acts of generosity of a public or private nature.

Mr. Dodge was elected to active membership in this Society September 1, 1891, and is thoroughly interested in the work being done, as shown by occasional gifts.

Soon after the death of Mrs. Dodge, which occurred March 27, the present year, it came to the knowledge of the Executive Board that in her will she had named this Society as a beneficiary to the amount of three thousand dollars, and acting on information gained from the public press the Board, in a note of appreciation addressed to Mr. Dodge of the gift above mentioned, asked that this Society might be the possessor of portraits of both himself and his deceased wife. Through his kindness and generosity the pair of pictures are now hanging upon the north wall of Salisbury Hall.

But before opportunity is given to inspect the portraits, let us look further into the history of the lives of the two subjects.

A large majority of the human race are content to drift along through life driven by the winds of fortune or mis-

fortune, with no specially matured plans or purposes in view other than to exist, or perhaps shine equally well with some of their friends and neighbors; no fixed, unswerving determination to excel the common lot of man, and accomplish something in the great theatre of life that might help to uplift and improve the conditions of mankind or add to their comfort, enlarge their possibilities, in some way helping to make life more productive of that which is best, noblest and elevating, or striving to assist in making the pathway of human existence more comfortable to traverse, by providing and perfecting utilities that may prove real instruments of usefulness and helpfulness to those desiring to take advantage of their use, thereby gaining a place among the world's benefactors, and receiving the commendation of a grateful people.

Fitch, Fulton, Whitney, Howe, McCormick, Edison and others have made special records and therefore have received honorable mention. Let us place the name of our fellow townsman, Thomas H. Dodge, upon the same roll of honor, for services he has rendered in giving fresh impetus to many of the great industries of this country, and in fact, other countries.

The question may be asked, "What has he done to merit such a reward?" Honorable Thomas Hutchins Dodge was the son of Malachi F. and Jane (Hutchins) Dodge, and born in the town of Eden, Lamoille County, state of Vermont, September 27, 1823. He enjoyed the advantages of the district schools in the towns of Lowell, Vermont, and Nashua N. H., his parents removing to the latter place when the subject of this sketch was about fourteen years of age. After pursuing his studies for a time in the schools in Nashua, Thomas became impressed by the presence and character of Judge Edmund Parker, his Sunday school teacher, who was then agent for the Jackson Manufacturing Company. Malachi Dodge, Jr., eldest brother of Thomas, was then employed by the Nashua Manufacturing Company. Thus the inspira-

tion came to young Thomas H. to become a lawyer and a manufacturer, and with such a resolution upon his lips, he asked permission of his parents to be allowed the privilege of trying to see what he with his personal efforts might do toward accomplishing the objects of his ambition. First, he arranged with his father to purchase the remaining time of his minority. The amount of compensation was agreed upon, the necessary papers signed and the boy was now at liberty to carve out his own future in the business world.

His attention was first given to the manufacture of cotton cloths, which operation was in due time completely mastered, having been advanced from time to time from one department of the work to another until he was entrusted with full and entire charge of the various departments. Not only did he become familiar with supplying the general market with his product, but also the rise and progress of the cotton industry in this country, and in the year 1850 published his "Review of the Rise and Progress and Present Importance of Cotton Manufactures of the United States," showing by the statistics the comparative and relative remuneration of English and American operatives. This publication gave a full detailed statement and account of the cotton business for the years 1838 to 1848, inclusive, number of spindles run, amount of capital employed, pounds of cotton used, number of yards of cloth made, number of operatives employed, both male and female, amount of wages paid in each class, coal, starch, flour, oil and tallow used, annual increase of business, together with a comparative statement as to wages paid in similar English manufacturing establishments. All this work he accomplished when quite a young man, at the same time prosecuting his studies at the Gymnasium Institute at Pembroke, N. H., and subsequently the Nashua Literary Institute. From both of these institutions he graduated with high honors.

His training thus far had increased his knowledge and interest in mechanical, chemical and philosophical subjects, and every opportunity for enlarging his stock of information

along those lines was most eagerly improved and the result of such investigations retained. One of his first inventions was a slight change in the shape of the warp bobbins, resulting in the saving of many thousands of dollars in the manufacture of cotton cloth.

Then came the improvement on the safety valve of the steam boiler. But among his early inventions, perhaps the one from which he personally received the greatest benefit, as it came when the help was most opportune, was his printing press made to print on paper or cloth from the roll. This press was patented November 18, 1851, and was the beginning of a material advance in the machinery for printing on paper, culminating in the production of the lightning presses of the present day.

From the sale of this invention he received a handsome sum of money, which together with the savings from his salary enabled him to devote three years to special study of the law, entering the office of Hon. George Y. Sawyer and Col. A. F. Stevens of Nashua, N. H., for that purpose. The three years expired in November 1854, and after passing a rigid examination, he was on December 5, 1854, admitted at Manchester, N. H., to practice in the courts of that state, and immediately opened a law office in the city of Nashua, where he commenced the practice of law at the age of thirty-one years.

As a result of the first sixteen years, covering the period of his personal effort in carving out his own future, he had acquired the special distinction of being prominently known and recognized as a skilled manufacturer, a meritorious inventor and a man of science, combined with admitted qualifications as a competent practitioner of the law. So many accomplishments concentrated in one individual, attracted the attention of Hon. Charles Mason, then commissioner of patents, who in March 1855, tendered Mr. Dodge a position on the board of examiners at the United States patent office, Washington, D. C., a situation which he,

through the advice of friends, accepted. Here his knowledge, training and experience, made him a most valuable assistant in discharging the requirements of a highly responsible position, being engaged much of his time upon appealed cases, among them the famous *Hussey Guard patent* for mowing and reaping machines; millions of dollars were involved in the decision of this case, which was decided according to the findings of Mr. Dodge, he being sustained on appeal by the Circuit Courts and also by the Supreme Court of the United States.

In 1857, the subject of this sketch made one of the most important improvements in labor-saving machines of the age. He conceived an arrangement and combination of mechanical devices by which the driver while seated on a certain mowing machine, could have full control of the entire finger-bar and cutting apparatus, raising either end or the entire bar, as occasion might demand. Hitherto it had been necessary for a man to accompany the driver, walking behind the cutting apparatus to lift it over obstructions. This invention did away with the extra man and also the great danger or risk of handling the finger-bar and cutting apparatus when in motion.

On the retirement of Judge Mason as commissioner of patents, Judge Joseph Holt was appointed in 1857, to succeed him. Two years later, however, Judge Holt was given the office of postmaster-general with a seat in President Buchanan's cabinet, subsequently rendering valuable service at Washington as secretary of war, and under President Lincoln was Judge-Advocate-General of the army.

While Judge Holt was at the head of the patent office, he reached the conclusion that a permanent board or court of appeals ought to be maintained in order to meet the public needs, and requested Mr. Dodge to name two members of the examining corps to be joined with himself as chairman, to constitute such a board, which body, under direction of the chairman, inaugurated new methods of procedure before

the patent office, greatly simplifying and facilitating business, a change which was recognized and gratefully acknowledged by various applicants and their attorneys throughout the country. On the second day of November 1858, Mr. Dodge, having decided to resume the practice of the law, handed in his resignation, which was accepted by Judge Holt in the following language:

UNITED STATES PATENT OFFICE, NOV. 3, 1858.

Sir:

I have received with emotions of unmingled sorrow your letter of yesterday, resigning the office of examiner, the duties of which you have for years discharged with such distinguished honor to yourself, and advantage to the public interest. It would have been to me a source of high gratification could I have enjoyed for the future that zealous support which you have so kindly afforded me in the past. While, however, I feel that your retirement will be a severe loss to the service, as it will be a personal affliction to myself, I cannot be insensible to the weight of the considerations which have determined you to seek another and more attractive field of labor. I shall ever recall with the liveliest satisfaction, the pleasant social and official relations which have marked our intercourse; and in accepting your resignation I beg to offer you my heartfelt thanks, alike for your personal friendship and for the high-toned, loyal and most effective coöperation, which, in the midst of circumstances of difficulty and embarrassment, you have constantly extended to me in the administration of this office. In whichever of the varied paths of life it may be your fortune to tread, be assured that you will bear with you *my* warmest wishes for your success and happiness.

Most sincerely your friend,

MR. THOMAS H. DODGE.

J. HOLT.

After his retirement from the patent office, on motion of Hon. Reverdy Johnson of Baltimore, Maryland, Mr. Dodge was admitted to practice in the supreme court of the United States. Soon, his office in Washington was literally thronged by clients seeking his professional services, and for twenty-five years and more, his law practice in patent cases was exceptionally large and remunerative, his practice being confined chiefly in the United States courts with equity cases to be heard by one or more judges in person. Most

careful preparation was given to each and every case, hence he was rewarded with almost universal success. It is recorded that during the quarter of a century devoted to his practice of the law, he gave eighteen hours out of the twenty-four to the interests of his clients, who were from among the list of prominent inventors, manufacturers and business men of the country. Litigations involving great monetary interests relating to the sewing machine, mowing and reaping machine, the horse-hay-rake, the wrench, loom, corset, barbed wire, the machines for making the same, and a long list of other patent inventions embracing a vast amount of wealth, were placed from time to time in his hands for their final solution:

While a resident in the capital city of Washington, Mr. Dodge devised the present plan of returning letters uncalled for, to the original writers. August 8, 1856, he submitted in writing a detailed statement of his plan to the postmaster-general, Hon. James Campbell, which plan, after overcoming some opposition, received the sanction of the law, and the present generations are enjoying the benefits and advantages of that branch of our postal system.

Early in the year 1864, Mr. Dodge established his home in Worcester, and from that day to the present, he has been, until recently, almost daily a commanding figure upon her streets, a most welcome and honored citizen. Although he has now passed his four score and third birthday and is soon to reach his eighty-fourth, it is hoped he may yet be spared to enjoy that, and other like anniversaries as they shall be given unto him.

His first home was at the corner of Main and Chandler streets on the site now occupied by Trinity Church. That corner lot with the house standing upon it, he purchased of the late Hon. Isaac Davis for 7,500 dollars, the deed bearing date of June 24, 1863.

This property he sold about the year 1869, to the Trinity Church people and removed to a house on William street

where he resided until 1872, when he went to number 33 Oxford street. But since 1877, has occupied his Willow Park residence number 766 Main Street, an elegant, well-appointed home which he caused to be constructed after his own suggestions and under his own supervision.

For many years Mr. Dodge continued to follow his legal profession after coming to Worcester, although at the same time he was actively interested in the manufacture of mowing machines, wrenches and other mechanical appliances. In 1881, he, with Charles G. Washburn, now member of Congress, organized the Worcester Barb Fence Company, Mr. Dodge being the president and Mr. Washburn secretary and manager. Their invention was patented not only in this country but in foreign countries. Later the plant together with the company's patents were sold to Washburn & Moen Manufacturing Company.

In 1883, feeling the strain incident to constant and continuous hard work covering a period of many years, with little or no relaxation, and being admonished by his family physician of the probable result if the same course was to be continued, and having secured a well-earned competency, Mr. Dodge decided to relinquish his professional labors, and henceforth devote his time to the enjoyment of his attractive home and giving attention to cultivating his spacious farm located in the northerly portion of the city.

He was married June 29, 1843, to Miss Eliza Daniels, a native of Brookline N. H. where she was born February 6, 1822, and died in Worcester March 27, 1907. She was a good representative of the old New England family stock, a person of strong character, unostentatious, courteous, thoughtful and possessed in a marked degree that cardinal virtue, charity. Her broad and kindly disposed perception led her to see and consider the conditions of all classes in life and with her large generous nature, she was continually planning to assist in helping to relieve the poor and the unfortunate persons who came within her notice. An act



MRS. ELIZA DANIELS DODGE.

of charity was to her a labor of love. No worthy person went from her door unrewarded, and no worthy cause passed unnoticed. Although the efforts of herself and husband had brought together the means by which they were at liberty to entertain and enjoy the companionship of persons even of the most select circles of society, both Mr. and Mrs. Dodge were heartily glad to welcome to their home the lowly as well as the more fortunate people of this world. Honesty and respectability were the chief credentials requisite for admission to their hospitable fireside. In many respects Mrs. Dodge, in traits of character, resembled her great grandmother, Prudence Lawrence, daughter of Thomas Lawrence of Groton. It is recorded of her, that she was very ladylike in appearance, gentle, kind and good, very benevolent, always giving and doing for someone. She was the wife of Samuel Cummings Esq., the first town clerk of Hollis N. H. serving from 1746, to 1770. He was also the first justice of the peace there, holding his commission from King George II.

Eliza Daniels Dodge was a descendant in the eighth generation, of Isaac Cummings of Ipswich and Topsfield, Massachusetts, daughter of Bridget (Cummings) Daniels of Hollis N. H., and granddaughter of Lieut. Benjamin Cummings, born in Hollis, November 25, 1757, who on the 19th of April 1775, marched as private in the company of Capt. Reuben Dow, Col. William Prescott's regiment, and took part in the battle of Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775, and received an order for a bounty coat November 20, 1775, enlisting in 1776, to serve one year in the Continental Army and rendered service about New York, also Princeton and Trenton, in New Jersey. Lieutenant Cummings was the youngest of his father's family. Although two of his brothers remained loyal to their king, Benjamin and his sister espoused the patriot's cause. She, Prudence Cummings, born November 26, 1740, became the wife of David Wright, and after the Minutemen, under Colonel Prescott had marched in response to the Lexington alarm, she, with other women of that neighborhood, gathered

near what is now Jewett's bridge, that spans the Nashua river between Groton and Pepperell, clothed in their absent husbands' apparel, armed with muskets, pitchforks, and such other weapons as they could readily secure, and after electing Mrs. Wright their commander, stationed themselves at the bridge to prevent if possible the passing of certain persons, who it was said were furnishing aid in opposition to the patriot's cause.

Besides, reports were being circulated that the regulars were marching in that direction, and frightful stories were carried from house to house causing intense excitement throughout the neighborhood. The impromptu, resolute "Bridge Guard" had not long to remain in expectation. Soon, Capt. Leonard Whiting, brother of Benjamin Whiting, the first sheriff for Hillsborough County, was seen approaching the bridge, mounted on horseback. As Captain Whiting was known to be a pronounced Tory, orders were given by the commander or "Sergeant of the Bridge Guard" (Mrs. Wright) to seize Whiting and hold him a prisoner. He was required to dismount and in his boots were found important despatches from Canada to the British in Boston, which were at once forwarded to the committee of safety at Cambridge, and the prisoner was handed over to the committee of observation for Groton.

A marker has been erected to note the spot and the event, and the Prudence Wright Chapter, D. A. R. of Pepperell, is named for her. She died December 2, 1823.

It will perhaps be remembered that our Civil War began during the time Mr. and Mrs. Dodge were residing in Washington, at which time, their home became a depository for hospital supplies sent from the north. Mrs. Dodge and Mrs. Dix of New York, attended to the delivering of these supplies to the places most in need of them, and hundreds of Union soldiers enjoyed the kindly ministrations of Mrs. Dodge as she personally cared for them when confined in the hospitals, either sick or wounded.

It is perhaps unnecessary to repeat what is generally familiar to the people of Worcester, that both Mr. and Mrs. Dodge were alike generous and public spirited. But in justice to them, attention ought to be called at this time to some of the numerous gifts for which Worcester people and Worcester institutions are indebted, without referring specifically to each of the almost numberless tokens of generosity that have given solace and comfort to a long list of needy persons; for the home of Thomas H. Dodge has for many years been a veritable treasure-house from which substantial encouragements and comforts have been freely and liberally dispensed. These must be spoken of in a general way, for their value and extent are known only to the giver and the recipient.

But among the institutions, some of which have been given generous assistance may be noted; The Odd Fellows' Home, Natural History Society, Dodge Park, to the City, Trinity Church, Piedmont Church, Union Church. And by the will of Mrs. Dodge; Thule Hall Association, Clark University, Piedmont Church Society, Temporary Home and Day Nursery Society, Worcester Children's Friend Society, Young Men's Christian Association, Young Women's Christian Association, Worcester Society of District Nursing, The Worcester Society of Antiquity, Worcester Employment Society, Worcester County Mechanics' Association, Worcester City Missionary Society, Worcester Boys' Club, Worcester Auxiliary to the Kindergarten for the Blind, Worcester Art Society, Worcester Art Museum, Worcester Woman's Club Corporation, Sons and Daughters of New Hampshire, Mothers' Child Study Circle, Home for Aged Women, Home for Aged Men, Congregational Club, Associated Charities, American Antiquarian Society, Woman's Christian Temperance Union, Worcester Woman's Club, Memorial Hospital, Baldwinville Hospital Cottages; also about fifty other bequests to her various relatives and friends; truly a most remarkable example of generosity most wisely distributed.

The second largest bequest mentioned in the will made

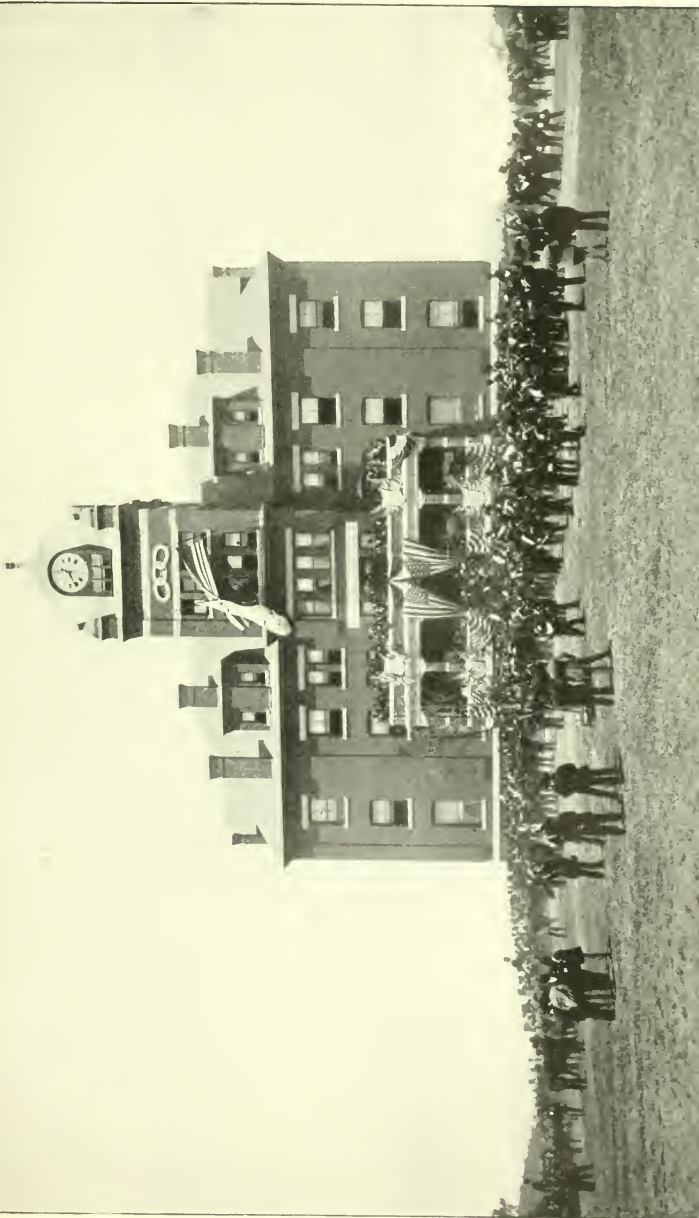
by Mrs. Dodge was for the benefit of the Natural History Society. Although confined to her bed for nearly twelve months during her final sickness, her mind much of the time was dwelling on possible acts of helpfulness, so thoughtful was it in her nature to be of others, and her hand reached out, in the form of gifts, to assist this and that object.

About the closing act of her life-work was a gift of money with which to furnish the Natural History Society with the "Reed Collection of Birds of Worcester County." This collection will include four hundred and sixty-eight specimens, mounted in twelve air-tight, dust and insect-proof cases, each seven feet high and six feet in length, and designed to be the most complete collection of local birds in the country. Several cases of this rare and costly display, are now on exhibition and those remaining to be set up will soon be completed ready for public inspection.

The birds are so skillfully mounted and arranged in groups with their nests and eggs in sight, that they seem as nearly as possible amid their natural surroundings. They must not only add largely to the attractiveness of the rooms of the Natural History Society, but also prove of great educational advantage to that institution.

Perhaps the most forcible illustration at present to be given of the character and inner grain of our esteemed townsman *Mr. Dodge*, will be by referring to his liberality in behalf of that organization with which he has no personal relation as a member, the Independent Order of Odd Fellows.

For many years the order had been contemplating and planning for the establishment of a home for aged and indigent Odd Fellows, who in their declining years could be properly cared for by the fraternity. After the trials of many years the point was finally reached when the location for the home was to be decided upon. Several cities and towns within the Commonwealth were visited by the committee charged with selecting and purchasing a desirable site for their building, Worcester among the rest. In nearly every instance where



the committee found what they deemed a favorable location, the owners demanded what might be considered an inordinate price for the land.

Mr. Dodge had been absent from home engaged on an important case pending in the courts, and on his return, in perusing a newspaper, noticed the account of a discouraging report from the committee on location. He gave the subject some attention, fully realizing the great work the organization was doing for the relief of its unfortunate members, and the invaluable services that might be rendered through the means of this proposed home to the helpless ones in years to come, and found himself deeply interested in the success of that home, so much so that he scarcely closed his eyes in sleep during the first night of his return to Worcester. When morning came, an offer was soon put in writing and sent to a member of the proper committee, the proposition being to deed without compensation, ten acres or more of land, sufficient for the location of the home, in such portion of his ample estate at the northerly portion of the city as they might select.

The generous offer was immediately accepted with grateful acknowledgments. The building was erected, and the home dedicated on June 22, 1892.

An extract only, is here given, of the action taken by the Grand Lodge on receiving the deed.

“Resolved, That the heart of Odd Fellowship throughout the commonwealth of Massachusetts is touched with sentiments of gratitude for the unsought and unexpected generosity of its benefactor in gratuitously giving a site for the foundation of its home in the central and attractive city of Worcester; that this act of benevolence by a person who has not experienced the satisfaction derived from close affiliation, but who has only observed the practical worth of Odd Fellowship by its apparent and actual results, will touch a common chord of sympathy and gratitude wherever Odd Fellowship is known and its usefulness is felt; that the thanks of this Grand Lodge, and through it, the thanks of all branches of

the Order in Massachusetts, are gratefully extended to Thomas H. Dodge, of Worcester, for the gift of land in that city, and for other and further acts of generosity in behalf of the Odd Fellows' Home planted in this jurisdiction; that by this outward act of acceptance of his donations, his kindness of heart is acknowledged, and that, in the prosecution and completion of this undertaking, his memory will be held in loving remembrance, and shall hereafter be perpetuated by some more fitting memorial in order that his goodness and generosity may be known to generations yet to come."

It may be noticed that in addition to giving the land, which was eleven acres for the site of the home, Mr. Dodge made a generous gift in money towards the purchase of a library for the home.

He also gave to the city of Worcester, thirteen acres of land directly contiguous to the Odd Fellows' Home for a public park, thereby providing another attraction for the inmates of the home. *That gift* was gratefully accepted in behalf of the city by the Park Commission, and given the name of Dodge Park, in honor of the generous hearted donor.

But this was not all he did for the home. Bordering on the westerly line of this tract of land owned by Mr. Dodge, is the location of the Boston & Maine railroad, and considerable demand was developed for lots along the line of the tracks of that company, on which to build shops for manufacturing purposes. Some sales had been made, and other lots were wanted. When it came to the mind of this large-hearted gentleman that should he sell all his land abutting this railroad for manufacturing purposes, and extensive buildings were constructed there, it would cut off the view from the windows of the home, of the numerous railway trains as they passed to and fro, which were now serving as a source of diversion for the unfortunate inmates unable to leave the building. In addition, the smoke likely to come in the future from a number of tall chimneys while the industries were in operation, would by the prevailing winds be driven towards

the home, greatly to the inconvenience of the occupants, and, acting on his personal option, voluntarily deeded to the home the land lying between that estate and the railway tracks, leaving forever an open view and one comparatively free from objectional vapors. How many men will be found during these strenuous money getting times, who would prefer to perform an act of charity, than to fill their pockets with gold, when left to their own free will?

The ancestry of Thomas H. Dodge has been traced in this country to Richard Dodge who came to Salem, Massachusetts in the year 1638. Richard was a brother of William, who settled in Salem in 1629. They were sons of John Dodge of Middlechinnock, Sommersetshire, England, who died in 1635, and who it is believed was great grandson and heir of the honors of John Dodge of Rotham, in the county of Kent. He was a descendant of Peter Dodge of Stepworth, to whom King Edward I, granted the Dodge Family Armorial, in the year 1273, for his valuable services both in peace and in war, that his descendants may know of his deeds of arms and valiant service toward the king's peace and the public good of the kingdom. This John Dodge of Middlechinnock, by will dated April 2, 1635, proved October 15, same year, mentions his wife Margery, who, with other bequests, was to have and enjoy one tenement in the parish of Halstocke, Dorsetshire; also names his children, Michael, William, Richard and Mary; Michael being named executor of the will. Michael remained in England, and died in East Coker, Sommersetshire. William came and settled in Salem, Massachusetts, in 1629, and died prior to 1692.

Richard Dodge the brother of William, removed from St. Badeaux, county of Devon about the year 1616, to East Coker, and was a resident there in 1633. Five years later, 1638, on the 29th day of October, he was received an inhabitant of Salem, Massachusetts, and died June 15, 1671. His widow Edith deceased June 27, 1678.

Their children were, John, Mary, Sarah, Richard, Samuel,

Edward and Joseph; and to this *Joseph* was given the honor of continuing the line of ancestors for our distinguished townsman, Thomas H. Dodge.

Following the reading of the paper, Mrs. Charles C. Baldwin spoke at length and very feelingly of the kindness and generosity of both Mr. and the late Mrs. Dodge, calling attention to many, as she thought, excellent traits of character to be found in the life of Eliza Daniels Dodge.

On motion of Mr. F. E. Williamson a committee was appointed to draft an expression of the Society's appreciation of the timely, and appropriate gift of the two portraits now placed on the walls of Salisbury Hall, through the generosity of Thomas H. Dodge, Esq.

That committee reported the following:

HON. THOMAS H. DODGE,

Dear Sir:—

It is indeed a rare experience to meet with an instance where such marked generosity was so wisely dispensed as in the case disclosed by the announcement of the Will of your late companion and helpmate, Eliza Daniels Dodge. The public institutions thus remembered by her, include nearly the entire list within the city of Worcester, and many thousands of dollars were included in the gifts therein mentioned.

It has come to us that all through her life, Mrs. Dodge has been given to doing various deeds of charitable work, and this final act on her part is but a fitting climax of one of those remarkable women who not only was able but willing to do for others.

Now the members of the Worcester Society of Antiquity in meeting assembled, fully appreciating the motive of the generous act by which their institution has been remembered by her, hereby desire to express their grateful acknowledgments to you, not only for the material help given, but for the thoughtfulness of the late Mrs. Dodge, and also, for your personal kindness and liberality in presenting to this Society portraits of both yourself and your late wife.

F. E. WILLIAMSON,
C. H. BURLEIGH,
GEORGE MAYNARD,

Committee.

By unanimous vote the report was accepted and adopted, the Secretary being instructed to forward a copy of the report to Mr. Dodge.

The correspondence given below will inform our readers of the special interest taken by our fellow member, the Hon. Thomas H. Dodge, in the work of this Society, and will also explain how the Committee on Publications was furnished the means with which to produce in print several numbers of its Proceedings just issued.

WORCESTER MASS., January 13, 1908.

MR. ELLERY B. CRANE,

39 Salisbury St., Worcester, Mass.

Librarian Worcester Society of Antiquity.

Dear Sir: Having been a member of your Society for some sixteen years, and much interested in the work of the said Society, and learning that the Society is much behind in its publications, and having a desire to see the Society fully up-to-date in its publications, I hereby offer to provide the sum of \$550 to aid the Society in accomplishing this desired work.

Truly yours,

Thomas H. Dodge.

HON. THOMAS H. DODGE.

Dear Sir: At a special meeting of the Executive Board, held at the office of the Society, your esteemed letter of January 13, addressed to the Librarian of the Worcester Society of Antiquity, Mr. Ellery B. Crane, in which you offer to provide the sum of five hundred and fifty dollars with which to aid the Society in printing their publications, was presented by him, and after due deliberation was formally accepted by a unanimous vote, and the Secretary was instructed to extend to you through this action of the Board, the thanks of the members of the Society for this renewed expression of your interest in the work being carried on, and for your liberality in offering to assist in placing before the public the result of a portion of one branch of that work.

For the Executive Board,

Truly yours,

Walter Davidson,

Secretary.

WORCESTER, MASS., January 14, 1908.

FAMILY RECORDS
COPIED FROM STRAY LEAVES OF A BIBLE.

BIRTHS.

Joseph Weld, born February 23, 1759.
Catherine Hall, born April 4, 1762.

MARRIAGES.

Joseph Weld, married to Catherine Hall, December 9, 1779.
Moses Dorr, married to Widow Catherine Weld, 1784.

Joseph Weld, born April 19, 1780.
Catherine Weld, born March 4, 1781.
Catherine Dorr, born January 9, 1785.
Mary Dorr, born March 5, 1787.
Moses Dorr, born July 13, 1789.
Joseph and Nancy Dorr, born May 6, 1793.
Charles Dorr, born December 15, 1796.
Enos Dorr, born August 22, 1799.

DEATHS.

Joseph Weld, died 1782, at sea.
Moses Dorr, died 1803.
Joseph Weld, Jr., died October, 1782.
Catherine Weld, died August, 1782.
Mary Dorr, died September 17, 1795.
Nancy Dorr, died October 5, 1793.
Joseph Dorr, died September 9, 1796.
Moses Dorr, died August 18, 1823.
Widow Catherine Dorr, died December 13, 1831, $\frac{1}{4}$ past six eve,
aged 69 years, eight months and 13 days.
Charles Dorr, left Hartford August 17, 1823, and never heard
from him since.

On opposite side of one leaf the following was found:

Henry Weld Ingals, December 18, 1808.
Catherine Hall Ingalls, July 4, 1809.
Mary Ingalls, August 28, 1812.

FROM WORCESTER RECORDS.

Enos Dorr married Caroline Allen, October 2, 1825. He was of
the firm of Dorr & Howland, booksellers and publishers in Worces-
ter as early as 1822.

PROCEEDINGS

OF THE

Worcester Society of Antiquity,

FOR THE YEAR 1907.

VOLUME XXIII.



Worcester, Mass.

PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.

1908.

U. S. A. CXXXII.

Gift
The Society

27 Ag '08

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND THIRTIETH MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, OCTOBER 1, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present: Messrs. Abbot, Burleigh, Crane, Coffin, Davidson, Ely, Eaton, Forehand, S. W. Hobbs, A. V. Hill, George Maynard, Geo. M. Rice, F. P. Rice, A. S. Roe, W. C. Smith, Williamson, Wesby, Miss Cogswell, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss May, Mrs. Williamson, Daniel E. Denny, Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. A. V. Hill.

The Librarian reported additions during the past month: three bound volumes and three hundred and thirty pamphlets, calling attention to fifteen unbound volumes and fifty-four papers presented by G. Stuart Dickinson as a continuation of the very extensive collection of publications on the subject of "Postage Stamps and Coins."

The Standing Committee presented the names of H. Wolff, Oscar A. Taft, Alonzo B. Davidson and Chandler Bullock, for membership, and they were duly elected.

The paper announced for the evening was then read.

A FEW NOTES IN THE HISTORY OF INVENTION AND PATENTS.

BY CHARLES H. BURLEIGH, ESQ.

When Smith has produced a new mechanism and shows it to his friend Jones, he is commonly met by the inquiry, "Have you patented it?" Probably he has, or intends to.

The word "patent," as you are probably aware, means open; unconcealed; public. Open to public

perusal; said of a document conferring some right or privilege, as Letters Patent; "Letters Patent" being an official document issued by a sovereign power, conferring a right or privilege on some person or party. Specifically, in the relation now under discussion, a writing granting to an inventor, for a term of years, the exclusive right to make, use and vend to others to be used the particular means or thing which constitutes his or her invention. The right or privilege conferred by such writing or Letters Patent is commonly known as a "patent right;" a right that can be bought and sold, conveyed by written deed; and practiced by the owner, patentee or assignee in the working, manufacture and sale of the thing patented. The prime feature of such right being that the Letters Patent give to the owner the privilege of suing, in the courts, any person who, without authority from the patentee, makes, sells or uses the same means as that secured by the Letters Patent.

No absolute right of property is conferred by the grant of the patent. The patentee is merely put in position to assert his *prima facie* right in case of infringement, and have the same adjudicated in a court where extrinsic evidence, if important, may be heard.

Invention was coeval with art. When primitive man, pushing through his budding mentality, arrived at that stage of development where he contemplated other things than those provided at his hand by bounteous nature, and found ready made in the laboratories of Mother Earth; then dawned within the brain of some primitive genius a conception of a means or method that would render nature's product more convenient and serviceable for his purpose; and something of adornment or utility was fashioned; the thing given a form to suit his passing fancy; christened by a name and eventually made known to more or less of his associates; they, in turn, being thereby encouraged to copy or improve. Then and thus were the

first steps taken in that march of invention which has, with ever-increasing strides and bolder advancements, moved forward to the present day, and is yet only upon the threshold of its ultimate progress; but which has yielded the myriad appliances, processes and mechanical wonders that we find about us on every hand and in every line; each article and mechanism in which was, at some period, a new invention and conceived by the inventive brain of man.

It will be understood that the modern theory and system of patenting inventions is the surviving outgrowth from the ancient customs of granting monopolistic franchises by royal decree. Long prior to the founding of the American republic, and probably in very remote times, there existed a custom in the various monarchical countries of the king or sovereign awarding to some person or company a sole right of engaging in some specific line of manufacture, importation or trade, and prohibiting others from engaging in such lines of business, thus causing a flood of wealth and profit to flow, from the exploitation of the specified commodities, into the pockets of the favored monopolist; which profits, in most instances, had to be divided, in greater or less proportion, with the sovereign or royal grantor of the monopoly. From such payments has come the word "royalties" as indicating the fees or percentage paid to the owner of a patented article by one exercising a license for its manufacture or use.

MONOPOLIES IN ENGLAND.

A brief trace from the history of monopolies in England may tend to a clearer conception of the evolution of the patent privilege, as it exists in respect to useful inventions, under the later laws.

Formerly, in England, the reigning prince considered himself entitled, as a part of his prerogative, to grant privileges of the nature of monopolies to any one who had

gained his favor. These grants became numerous and they were oppressive and unjust to various classes of the Commonwealth.

In the reign of Edward III a statute was formed which granted a free trade equally to foreigners and natives. This was afterwards repealed and monopolies were established that not only excluded foreigners from the English trade, but also injured the English nation itself. In order that the favorites of monarchs might be rewarded, or that the crown might be enriched, Letters Patent were granted that conferred such monopoly as interfered with the rights of other people and restricted their freedom of trade.

We read that such exclusive rights were very common in England previous to the accession of the house of Stuart (1603), and were carried to an oppressive extent during the reign of Elizabeth, including so much of the commercial transactions of the country as to threaten the utter ruin of trade.

It was the policy of that illustrious monarch never to call upon her people for supplies unless necessity compelled it, and as a means of raising money for herself, as well as of bestowing favors on her courtiers and servants, these exclusive privileges were multiplied by her until the most common articles of consumption, such as salt, iron, powder, vinegar, bottles, saltpeter, oil, starch, paper, etc., were brought under the control of the monopolists. The advance in the prices of all these commodities was enormous; salt, for instance, which had formerly sold at sixteen pence a bushel, being held at fourteen or fifteen shillings. At the same time, to protect monopolists in the enjoyment of their privileges, they were endowed with arbitrary powers of searching the stores and habitations of those who were suspected of infringing upon their rights, and of collecting heavy penalties from them when found guilty. As an instance of these extraordinary powers especially may be

mentioned that granted to those who held the exclusive privilege of selling saltpeter; they had the power of entering every house, and of committing whatever havoc they pleased in stables, cellars, or wheresoever they suspected saltpeter might be gathered.

It might be thought that a princess so sagacious as Elizabeth would have foreseen the consequences of so extensively granting monopolies; but the reduced state of the royal funds and her fondness for favorites may have obscured, for the time being, the true interest of the people. The grievance at length became such that the clamor of the country was loud and general, and towards the end of her reign she sent a message to Parliament that she would cancel the most oppressive exclusive privileges she had granted.

This relief was but partial, and the conditions of trade still continued in so far insupportable that some twenty years later, notwithstanding the opposition of the Crown—which held it to be a valuable part of the prerogatives,—a strong fight was made in Parliament and trade monopolies were, by an act of 1624, repealed, thereby securing freedom of industry in Great Britain, and much encouraging the spirit of invention and progress. This act was, in the reign of James I, the statute known as the statute against monopolies. It enacted that “all monopolies and all commissions, grants, licenses, charters, Letters Patent,” etc., “for the sole buying, selling, making, or using anything, shall be void.” There was, however, a special exception from this enactment of all Letters Patent and grants of privilege for fourteen years or under, of the “sole working or making of any manner of new manufacture within the realm to the true and first inventors of such manufacture which others, at the time of making such Letters Patent and grant, should not use; so they be not contrary to law, or mischievous to the state, by raising the price of commodities at home, or hurt of trade or generally incon-

venient." Upon these words hangs the whole law of Letters Patent for inventions.

At first judges construed grants of monopoly to inventors very strictly; but afterwards it was seen that they were for the benefit of trade and were dealt with more liberally. It was construed under this statute that the new manufacture to which the patent pertained must not be generally inconvenient; and an instance is noticed where a patent for a fulling-mill to thicken bonnets and caps was set aside upon the holding "that it was inconvenient to turn laboring men to idleness."

An important modification of the law was introduced by a statute of Queen Anne, which required every inventor to describe in detail the nature of the invention in an instrument called a "specification."

In 1631 Charles I, under the pressure of financial difficulties, again asserted the ancient powers of the Crown and granted trade monopolies as a means of replenishing the royal treasury. But such was the effect of the victories already gained, and such the temper of the people, that the exclusive privileges thus conferred were generally disregarded, and all endeavors to enforce them failed.

COLONIAL GRANTS.

In America, prior to the adoption of the Federal Constitution, some of the state or provincial governments granted exclusive privileges, but these privileges were of comparatively little value and of quite varying tenure in the different instances. The colonists who came to America from England had become familiar with the idea of granting patent privileges by the Crown to inventors, and for encouragement of industrial adventures. Accordingly, the Colonial governments were petitioned to for grants of that nature by people who wished to engage in a new enterprise. Some of the colonies granted patents, not only for new inventions, but also for the starting of new lines

of industry within the colony. Among those that granted exclusive privileges may be mentioned New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, New York, Pennsylvania, Virginia and perhaps others. I can find no record of patents having been granted by the provincial, colonial, or state government of New Jersey, Delaware, Georgia and the Carolinas.

MASSACHUSETTS.

In Massachusetts, in 1641, Samuel Winslow had invented a method of manufacturing salt, and it was granted by the General Court that "none are to make this article for ten years, except in a manner different from his—provided he set up works within a year." (Possibly this may have been an ancestor of the Samuel Winslows of Worcester, noted for their production of skates.)

In 1652 John Clark was allowed by General Court ten shillings for three years from every family who should use his invention for saving wood and warming houses at little cost. After a trial for this period he was granted the same privilege during life. From this we presume that the invention had some merit, but we are not informed as to what the invention comprised in its method. (It certainly was not a modern coal combination.)

In 1656 John Winthrop, son of the Governor, was granted sole privilege for twenty years for making salt in Massachusetts, after his particular method.

In 1671 Richard Wharton (a Boston lawyer) & Company were granted certain special privileges for the manufacture of tar, pitch, turpentine, etc.

CONNECTICUT.

As interesting examples of the practice in obtaining these grants the following extracts are taken from Connecticut records:

In 1724 Richard Rogers of New London petitioned for the exclusive right for fifteen years to manufacture duck

for sails of shipping, stating that he had eight looms already set up. Twenty-six leading men of New London signed a certificate as to the good quality of the duck. Also the following was submitted:

“New London, 20th May, 1724.

“We, the subscribers, being weavers, and work in Richard Rogers, his shop, in New London, and we do declare that a certain piece of duck, marked No. 4 RRER, was wove in said Rogers, his shop, and do further declare that it is good merchantable cloth, and of the best cloth that is made of that sort of duck.”

Signed, by six weavers.

The Lower House granted the petition, but it was negatived in the Upper. The next year Rogers renewed his petition at greater length, and was allowed exclusive privilege of manufacturing duck for seven years, October, 1725.

As we all have some appreciation of the modern steel industry, as illustrated in the sky-scraper, the railways, and the Carnegie library funds, the following may be of interest as showing what perhaps was the primal step in that line on this continent:

May, 1728.

“To the Hon. General Assembly of the English Colony of Connecticut in New England, in America, Now Sitting.”

“The humble memorial and request of Samuel Higley, of Simsbury, and Joseph Dewey, of Hebron, sheweth:”

“That the said Higley hath, with great pains and cost, found out and obtained a curious art, by which to convert, change and transmute common iron into good steel, sufficient for any use; and was the very first that ever performed such an operation in America, having the most perfect knowledge thereof, confirmed by many experiments; and hath communicated the same to the above

named Joseph Dewey, and jointly with him, have made further experiment and improvement, with considerable cost and labor; and we are thereby well assured that the art, by good improvement, may redound to the public benefit and advantage of this colony, in that we have good reason to hope that we shall produce as good, or better steel than what comes from over the seas, and at considerable cheaper rate. And that the affair be set forward with the greater expedition and certainty, we propose to take into our company and assistance four men, more able and of greater ability than ourselves to promote and set forward, to the honor of the British nation and prosperity of this colony.”

“Therefore we, the said Higley and Dewey, humbly pray this honorable assembly would be pleased to grant to us, your honors’ humble petitioners, our heirs and assigns, free liberty to set forward said art, and practice the business or trade of steel making, for the space of twenty years next coming, and prohibit all others that may pretend thereto, within this colony, without our consent; provided we, your petitioners, or any under us, improve the said art to any good and reasonable perfection, within two years from the day of the date hereof, and so long as we shall well prosecute the same as above, and no longer, and your memorialists as in duty bound shall ever pray.”

(Signed)

SAMUEL HIGLEY,
JOSEPH DEWEY.

This petition was accompanied by the following affidavit:

“This may certify to all concerned that Samuel Higley, of this town of Simsbury, came to the shop of us, the subscribers, being blacksmiths, some time in June, 1725, and desired us to let him have a pound or two of iron, made at the new works near Turkey Hills, which we, according to his desire, let him have, shaping several pieces according to his order. He desired that we would take notice of

them, that we might know them again; for, said he, I am going to make steel of this iron, and shall, in a few days, bring them to you to try for steel. Accordingly, he brought the same pieces which we let him have, and we proved them, and found them good steel, which was the first steel that ever was made in this country, that we ever saw or heard of. Since which he hath made farther experiments, taking from us iron, and returning it in good steel. As witness our hands, this 7th day of May, 1728."

(Signed)

TIMOTHY PHELPS,
JOHN DRAKE.

The General Assembly recognized the petition and awarded the grant in substantially this form:

"Whereas, we being willing to give all due encouragement to works of this nature, are pleased to condescend to their request; and do therefore by these presents grant to them, the said Samuel Higley and Joseph Dewey, our license and liberty for the sole practicing the said art of steel making, to be and remain to said Higley and Dewey, for and during the space of ten years, next ensuing this date, strictly forbidding all persons practicing the same within this colony without the consent and approbation of the said Samuel Higley and Joseph Dewey, under their hands and seals, as they will answer the country at their peril; the said Higley having power to take into their company, in and of himself, three partners, and the said Dewey, in like manner, one partner. Provided, always, that the said Higley and Dewey improve the art as above, to any good and reasonable perfection, within two years, and so long as they shall prosecute the same, and no longer."

In 1753 Jabez Hamlin and Elihu Chauncey were granted a patent for liberty for fifteen years, for the erecting and setting up of a machine for dressing of flax, which was invented and brought into use in Scotland and

Ireland. This, it seems, was a recognition of the English practice of granting patents to the person importing an invention. Some of the conditions and provisions of the grant are peculiar and interesting. For instance, it was provided that "if the said memorialists shall not, within seven years next ensuing, set up one such machine, at least, in every town in this colony, that they shall forfeit and lose the benefit of setting up in all such towns as they so neglect, after the seven years are so expired; and the inhabitants of said town may themselves set up said machines as they see cause."

Connecticut has always been noted for its clocks. The following grant shows the early trend of invention in that industry, the idea being a clock that shall wind itself up. The petition of the inventor reads:

"That your petitioner, after unwearied trouble, pains and study for a number of years now last past, in search of mechanical knowledge, not only for his own pleasure and amusement, but for the benefit of mankind, has made a large improvement thereon, by inventing, contriving and executing a clock or machine that winds itself up by the help of the air, and will continue so to do without any other aid or assistance, until the component parts thereof are destroyed by friction, which will keep the most regular time of any machine yet invented, as it is ever wound without any variation or stop to her motion, and consequently not only a great ornament, but improvement in mechanism, which your Honors' petitioner will submit to your honors, and beg them to take the matter into their wise consideration; and as he has been at great pains, trouble and expense in accomplishing the same, that they would graciously grant unto your petitioner the sole and exclusive right and privilege of making and vending said kinds of clocks for the term of fourteen years."

(Signed)

BENJAMIN HANKS.

Dated at Litchfield, this 6th day of October, A. D. 1783.

The Lower House, at first, negative his position; but finally such exclusive privilege is granted.

Connecticut is pre-eminently a land of inventors and more patents are issued to residents of Connecticut in proportion to the total number of inhabitants than in any other state or country in the world.

NEW HAMPSHIRE.

In some instances early patent grants included more than one invention. We find in New Hampshire, in 1786, Benjamin Dearborn, printer, stated in a petition, that "having been sole inventor of a new constructed printing press, which has many conveniences and advantages that the common kind has not. having also been the sole inventor of a new constructed balance of scales, which for cheapness and convenience exceeds anything of the kind before used; and having written a collection of rules in arithmetic in a concise, intelligible manner, for the use of schools, entitled *The Pupil's Guide*, your petitioner presuming that the collected wisdom of the state will not disown inventions formed on the principles of usefulness and economy, but will give countenance and encouragement to the inventor, prays that an exclusive right of making and selling said press and scales, and of printing and vending said guide with any additions and improvements he may make on either of them, may be secured to him * * * for the term of twenty-one years."

The New Hampshire Legislature enacted a bill granting such rights for the term of fourteen years June 14, 1786.

This appears to be an instance where a patent for two inventions and a copyright were secured in a single grant.

In 1787 Benjamin Dearborn was granted another patent or exclusive right for a hand engine for throwing water, and for a balance or scales, both being included in one act.

In 1788, in New Hampshire, an exclusive right for fourteen years was petitioned for by Oliver Evans of New Cas-

tle, Delaware, for three inventions: one an elevator, another for what he termed a "hopper boy"—devices for handling grain, and meal or flour in a mill—and another for a steam carriage so constructed as to be propelled or moved by power of steam and the pressure of the atmosphere for conveying burdens without the aid of animal force." A grant for the two first named inventions was awarded him in February, 1789, for seven years. What became of the steam carriage I am unable to say.

FEDERAL ACTS.

At the present time all of the civilized nations have provided for the encouragement and protection of inventive skill and industry, to a greater or less extent. Upon the experience and practical workings of various systems previously existing in the older nations, were founded the laws and practice established by this country. The theories of the English laws naturally entered the more largely into our system, but important differences were embodied in the acts passed by the Federal government, giving a greater freedom of action and requiring a lesser degree of taxation to the inventor in the exploitation of his productions.

THE ACT OF 1790.

The American patent system was founded by the Act of April 10, 1790. It was inspired by Thomas Jefferson, who may be justly called the father of the American Patent Office. He, it is said, took great pride in it and gave personal consideration to every application that was made for a patent from the time of that act in 1790 until 1793; the time during which the power of revision and rejection granted by that act was in force.

By the Act of 1790 the duty of granting a patent was imposed upon the Secretary of State, the Secretary of War and the Attorney-general, the patent securing to the

inventor the exclusive benefits of his invention for fourteen years. The act prescribed the mode in which application should be made, the conditions on which it should be granted, the proceedings by which it might be annulled, and the remedies for its violation by infringement. In those early days the granting of a patent was considered quite an event. Every step in the issuing of a patent was taken with great care and caution, Mr. Jefferson seeking always to impress upon the minds of his officers and the public that the granting of a patent was a matter of no ordinary importance.

We are told, by tradition handed down to us through the generations by those who love to speak of Mr. Jefferson's virtues and eccentricities, that "when an application for a patent was made under the first act, he would summon Mr. Henry Knox of Massachusetts, Secretary of War, and Mr. Edmund Randolph of Virginia, Attorney-general, and with these distinguished officers would examine the application critically, scrutinizing the specification and claim rigorously."

The language of the act was "to grant patents for any such useful art, manufacture, engine, machine or device as they should deem sufficiently useful and important." This was held to give the Board authority to refuse patents for want of novelty; also for insufficiency of utility or importance. This authority was exercised with considerable rigor, and with such illiberality that as a result the majority of the applications failed to pass, and only three patents were granted during the first year. In 1791 thirty-three patents were granted, and in 1792 the number was eleven, and 1793 twenty, making sixty-seven under the above-named act.

In the Act of 1790 there was no provision for an appeal from the decision of the tribunal having the cases under consideration, and the strictness with which it exercised its powers was a cause of much complaint. Inventors con-

tended that these officers were, by education and interest, hostile to the classes who sought benefits under the patent act, and that they exercised arbitrary powers in making their decisions. No doubt this was to some extent true, or at least it was true that they reluctantly granted patent privileges: probably from a settled conviction that a too liberal granting of such privileges would be detrimental to the interests of the country. It is said, however, that Mr. Jefferson held to the view that the patent law was not framed to collect revenue, a feature incident to most of the foreign laws, but was intended to encourage the production of things new and useful. He, therefore, believed in dealing liberally with those to whom patent rights were granted.

Under the Act of 1790 the fees for the granting of a patent were as follows: For receiving and filing the petition, 50c.; for filing specification per copy sheet containing 100 words, 10c.; for making out the patent, \$2; for affixing the great seal, \$1; for indorsing the day of delivery to the patentee, including all intermediate services, 25c. The patent, after passing the board, required the certificate of the Attorney-general and the signature of the President to make it complete.

This law required that a written specification be filed with the Secretary of State containing a description of the article desired to be patented, accompanied by drafts or models, and explanations. The specification was required to be so particular and the models so exact as not only to distinguish the invention or discovery from other things before known and used, but to enable persons or workmen skilled in the particular class of manufacture whereof it was a branch, or in the art with which it might be nearest connected, to make, construct and use the same, to the end that the public might have full benefit thereof after the expiration of the patent.

ACT OF 1793.

With the impetus given to inventive genius by the Act of 1790 there arose certain interests opposed to the power of revision and rejection which it authorized, and such power was destroyed by an act dated Feb. 24th, 1793, an act that was of much detriment to the material welfare of the country. We are not informed as to who was the author of this act, but it is a matter of history that it met Mr. Jefferson's opposition. It is said that he pointed out consequences which would result from the breaking down of the barriers thrown around the granting of patents by the Act of 1790. He held that the promiscuous granting of exclusive privileges, or the creating of monopolies in any art or industry, was against the theory of popular government and pernicious in its effect. But the interests which contended for revision were too strong for Mr. Jefferson's objections.

After the Act of 1793 became a law the control of the granting of patents continued in the State Department, but the practice which then prevailed, and the construction put upon the law, was that the granting of a patent was a mere ministerial act, the Honorable Secretary, Mr. Jefferson, deciding that it took away all power of revision from his office.

ALIENS.

The first act made no distinction between citizens and aliens as to the procurement of patents under the law. The Act of 1793, however, prohibited the granting of patents to persons not citizens of the United States, but by an act of April 17, 1800, the law was so amended as to give aliens who had resided two years in this country the same right as citizens, provided they filed with their applications an affidavit setting forth their desire and intention to become citizens.

The Act of 1793 provided that interfering applications

should be submitted to arbitration of three persons, one chosen by each applicant and the third appointed by the Secretary of State. The decision of this tribunal was to be final, and if either party in the interference refused to go into arbitration, then the patent was to be issued to the opposing applicant. The act made no provision for the extension of patents.

PATENT OFFICE.

April 28, 1810, Congress authorized the President to purchase a suitable building for the general post office and the "office of the keeper of patents," in such situation, and furnished in such manner as the interests of the United States and the safety and convenience of those officers, and the arrangement of the models in the patent office should, in his opinion, require. The sum of \$20,000 was appropriated for such purpose and a building purchased situated on the site later occupied by the Post Office Department. The building was repaired and fitted up under a later appropriation of something over \$9500, and in 1812 the Patent Office was removed to the building on the site of the Post Office Department and there the Patent Office remained until 1836.

During these early years the inventors directed their energies chiefly to things of an agricultural or commercial nature, the production of implements for tillage of the soil and converting its products. Also, means for navigation attracted much attention, the primal development of the steamboat having been an engrossing achievement in that line.

Manufactures other than those for domestic purposes and in a domestic way were comparatively non-existent. Arts were not understood except by a small number, and who conducted their work in a small and individual manner. The environments and necessities of the young country had led the activities of the people toward other con-

siderations, and they looked to the mother country for their supply of manufactured products other than those of the home-made order. Some geniuses were sending their imaginative minds into the realms of the great unknown, but generally the young aspirant was advised that the usual daily routine of farm labor and "chores" was more profitable than wasting time on contrivances and new-fangled notions.

The War of 1812 checked for a time the inflow of commodities from Europe, and thus caused our people to assume a virtue of necessity, and to enter upon the devisement and production of things in many branches of manufacture that had before been almost wholly unattempted, the result being a marked increase in the exercise of constructive ingenuity and inventive thought.

AVERAGE GROWTH.

The steady growth of improvements and in the patenting thereof during the years following the establishment of the Patent Office in 1790 to its later reorganization, may be illustrated by a statement of the averages for the years of successive decades:

From 1790 to 1800, the average issue of patents per year was 26; from 1800 to 1810, the average issue of patents per year was 91; from 1810 to 1820, the average issue of patents per year was 200; from 1820 to 1830, the average issue of patents per year was 297; from 1830 to 1835, the average issue of patents per year was 605. These figures, while remarkable for their time, seem meagre in comparison with the present condition.

From 1790 to the reorganization of the Patent Office in 1836, 11,348 patents were granted, a large number of which were valueless owing to a lack of novelty and usefulness in the alleged inventions. But some of the most important inventions of the age were brought out during this time.

ACT OF 1836.

The abuses growing out of a system of granting patents promiscuously without further inquiry than as to the payment of the fee and the form of the application papers, attracted public attention early in the century, but not until 1836 was the opposition to the then existing system strong enough to invoke Congressional action. In that year it was moved in the Senate that "a select committee be appointed to take into consideration the state and condition of the Patent Office and the laws relating to the granting of patents for new and useful inventions." The committee was appointed and reported on the 28th of April of the same year, making an extended report, setting forth the abuses that had grown up as a consequence of the Act of 1793.

In making report to the Senate Senator Ruggles of Maine, who was the early champion of the reform, speaking of the practical operation of the law of 1793 and its effect upon inventors and the public, said: "Under the acts referred to, the Department of State has been going on for more than forty years issuing patents on every application, without any examination into the merits or novelty of the invention. And the evils which necessarily result from the law as it exists must continue to increase and multiply daily until Congress shall put a stop to them." The various existing evils were set forth in detail in the report.

The committee reported a bill for the reorganization of the Patent Office, and the twenty-fourth Congress framed the Act of 1836, which became a law on July 4th of that year. This act revolutionized the American patent system, and the experience of later years has demonstrated the value of their work.

By the Statute of 1836 the Patent Office was created a bureau of the Department of State. Its chief officer was

to be called the Commissioner of Patents; he to be appointed by the President, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate. The act provided for a chief clerk of the Patent Office to have custody of the seal, the records and the models of the office, and to perform the duties of the Commissioner during his absence. It also provided for an examining clerk, at a salary of \$1500 a year; two clerks at \$1200 each, one clerk at \$1000; also a machinist at \$1250, and a messenger at \$700 a year. The Commissioner and Chief Clerk were both required to give bonds for faithful performance of the duties of their office. Patents were to be issued for a term not exceeding fourteen years, the fee for the same being \$30. Provision was made for the extension of patents for a term of seven years under certain named conditions. The act provided nearly the same regulations in relation to specifications and drawings as did the Act of 1790; also in respect to the oath or affirmation as to the originality of the inventions. The most important feature of the act, however, was the inauguration of a system of examinations into the novelty of the inventions or discoveries applied for. It was provided that the Commissioner should make, or cause to be made, an examination of the alleged new invention or discovery, and that in order to entitle a person to the grant of a patent it must appear that he is the original and first inventor or discoverer of the thing for which patent is claimed; that the invention, or any part thereof, had not been previously known or patented, or described in any printed publication in this or any foreign country; that the invention had not been in public use or on sale with the applicant's consent and allowance prior to the application; that the description shall not be insufficient or defective, and that the Commissioner shall deem the invention sufficiently useful and important. The law also provided for a Board of Examiners, to which appeal might be made by the inventor in case of an adverse action by the Commis-

sioner, the fee for such appeal being \$25. Under this provision it was the practice of the office to detail three examiners to perform the work of deciding cases on appeal, but sometimes persons not connected with the office were called upon to serve as judges in an appeal case.

This Statute of 1836 modified but retained the discrimination in favor of American inventors. It required but one year's residence in this country, and provided that a subject of Great Britain should pay \$500 upon making his application, while for other foreign applicants the fee was \$300. This discrimination continued until 1861, when it was abolished. The law of 1836 also created what is known as the Caveat system, and also provided methods for disposing of interfering applications,—cases in which two or more inventors have presented applications for the same patentable subject matter.

ORGANIZATION.

Soon after the passage of the law of 1836 the reorganization of the Patent Office was inaugurated; the officers appointed were: Henry L. Ellsworth, commissioner of patents; J. W. Hand, chief clerk; Charles M. Keller, examiner of patents; Henry Stone, draftsman; Thomas Johns, in charge of files, records, preparing official copies, and recording assignments; John J. Roane, clerk for recording patents issued; Hazard Knowles, machinist in charge of models, and Henry Bishop, messenger.

It is said that by many persons this organization was regarded as exceedingly extravagant, although the force consisted of but eight people. A room for containing models was fitted up in the upper part of the old Post Office building. This model room was 40 by 80 feet in dimension, and the Commissioner spoke of this room and its contents as being "one of the grandest evidences of inventive genius on the globe."

FIRE OF 1836.

Early on the morning of Dec. 15th, 1836, the Post Office building, in which the Patent Office was located, was found to be on fire. The fire had gained such headway when people arrived that on account of the dense smoke it was not possible to enter the Patent Office rooms, and all attempts to save the property were futile. Some of the Post Office archives were saved, but nothing was preserved in the Patent Office except one volume from the library, and that of little value. There is very little on record concerning this event. The fire was discovered about half after three o'clock, and had evidently been burning some time. The committee to investigate the destruction concluded that the fire originated in the cellar under the Post Office. The exact location could not be ascertained, but inasmuch as the ashes from the wood fires were deposited in a pine box in the same room where the kindling wood was stored, it did not seem necessary to suppose the fire of incendiary origin, especially since a year before fire had been discovered in this same box and extinguished.

MODELS DESTROYED.

The office then contained about 7000 models, said to have been the grandest collection in the world, among them many that displayed great talent, ingenuity and mechanical science on the part of their inventors; valuable models relating to the application of steam to the propelling of boats, locomotives and mills. Among the things destroyed was a volume of drawings elegantly executed by the hand of Robert Fulton, delineating the various parts of the machinery he employed, together with three illustrations of his steamboat making its first trip up the Hudson, representing it passing the Highlands and at two other points, with beautiful sketching of the surrounding scenery. This volume, if it could have been preserved, would have been of great historic value.

ACT OF 1837.

In 1837 a bill was passed having in view the reproduction of models and patent records which had been destroyed by giving to the patentees the right to record the same anew in the Patent Office without charge; and also making certain provisions for compulsory recording of specifications and drawings of patents which appeared before the courts. An appropriation of not exceeding \$100,000 was provided to pay the cost of replacing models, etc., and every prior patentee was called upon to send his patents or sworn copies of the same.

As a result of this act it was stated in the reports of 1837 that some 2000 of the more than 10,000 previously issued patents had been restored, and in 1838 that so many of the models and drawings had been restored that the office was regarded as pretty fairly reorganized in this respect. The restoration of destroyed models was discontinued in 1849.

Since 1836 the patent laws have been somewhat modified at various times, but the main features continue substantially as then adopted.

An act in 1842 provided for the patenting of ornamental designs, also requiring that patented articles be marked with the date of the patent.

By an act March 2, 1861, the term of patents was changed to seventeen years; extension of patents forbidden except by special Act of Congress. The fees for patents were fixed at the present rate, \$15 on application, and \$20 for issuing the patent, and the establishment of a permanent board of three examiners-in-chief to hear appeals. Also sundry other provisions were enacted.

In 1870 an act was passed which consolidated and gathered into one comprehensive measure the features of the preceding legislation. Subsequently, the enactments were incorporated in the "Revised Statutes of 1874," and

which, with some later additions, is the existing law of to-day.

RESULTS.

What has been the effect of the stimulating and inducive encouragement held out by this system of patenting upon the inventive minds of the people? We have but to look around and on every hand we see the grand results. Contrast the printing-press of Benjamin Franklin with its one impression per minute with the rotary perfecting presses that print twenty-page newspapers, colored and folded, at 30,000 per hour. Look at the spinning-wheel of our grandmothers, forming its single strand of yarn, then at the self-operator with its hundreds of whirling spindles in ceaseless hum. Compare the stage-coach and saddle pillion with the trolley car, the vestibuled Pullman train, and the automobile. Send your thought from the wax-sealed written sheet to the telephone, the phonograph, and wireless systems of telegraphy. It may seem a long tow from the Mayflower, bowing to the caprice of the fickle breeze, to the mighty ocean palace racing across the Atlantic at a speed which bids defiance to the winds. Yet these are but a few of the results, and perhaps not the greatest in beneficent developments.

At the present time (1907) the Patent Office comprises thirty-nine examining divisions and some ten other divisions, and employs over 700 people, ranging in salaries from the Commissioner at \$5000 to messenger boys at \$360 per year. It has accumulated a surplus income amounting to more than \$6,400,000 over and above all expenses connected with the office. In the year 1906 more than 56,000 applications were filed, and more than 31,000 patents were granted. The cost of running the office was \$1,554,891, and the income \$1,790,921 during that year.

Since 1836 the United States has issued more than 866,000 patents for inventions, not including those for orna-

mental designs, and there are now in the office some 12,500 applications pending and awaiting action by the examiners.

All of these patents are the footprints in the onward march of industrial advancement toward a higher plane of civilization and better living; each a contribution, however small or great, of some inventive mind striving to render an appreciative advantage to some class of humanity; and to bring greater utility, more of comfort; more of pleasure, or more of health and luxury into the reach of some of the people; not perhaps from the love of humanity or from any purely charitable motives, but in the hope of attaining such reward as may show a rich return for the endeavor, the thought, and the patient labor expended in the working out of the inventions. In almost every line of human activities numerous inventors have urged on the progress step by step. If we look backward across the vista of the years we can note the magnitude, the rapidity and the marvelous achievements of this grand progressive march of invention—a march and progress which still goes on with augmented vigor, and which will open to the future a magnificence of utilitarian greatness and wonderful attainments of which it is impossible, at the present time, to even dream.

OCTOBER 1, 1907.

Remarks followed by Hon. Alfred S. Roe and Franklin P. Rice, and on motion of Mr. Roe a vote of thanks was extended to Mr. Burleigh for his exceedingly interesting essay.

Mr. Franklin P. Rice, chairman of the Special Committee appointed at the July meeting, made a report, which was accepted and laid on the table.

The committee to advise action regarding the matter of the Elihu Burritt memorial to be erected in New Britain,

Conn., was announced by the President as follows: Hon. Alfred S. Roe, Lyman A. Ely and Woodbury C. Smith.

Mr. Roe referred to the serious illness of Hon. Ledyard Bill, and on his motion the Secretary was instructed to express by letter to Mr. Bill the sympathy of the members present, and extend their hope for his recovery.

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND THIRTY-FIRST MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, NOVEMBER 5, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, President Maynard presiding. Others present: Messrs. Burleigh, Crane, Coffin, Davidson, Ely, Eaton, Forehand, A. V. Hill, George Maynard, Wheeler, Williamson, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss Reed, Mrs. Ramsay, Miss Smith, Miss Grover and others.

The Librarian reported additions for past month: twenty bound volumes, seventy-five pamphlets, a collection of papers, and twenty-three articles for the museum; also two diaries kept by Silas A. Norcross, who resided much of the time during his life in or near Winchendon, Mass. The period covered by entries in these diaries, 1838 to 1850 and 1856 to 1887.

The gift from Timothy Ruggles Green, son of the late Judge William N. Green, first judge of the Police Court in Worcester, consisted of four commissions granted his brother, Wm. N. Green, Jr., who served in the Civil War, enlisting in New York city.

These commissions were for a lieutenant, captain, colonel and brigadier-general by brevet; also a resolution adopted by the New York City Council June 24, 1864, signed by His Honor Mayor Godfrey Gunther, expressing deep regret at the death of Lieut.-Col. Wm. N. Green, Jr., from wounds received in battle, extolling his many virtues and extending sympathy to his bereaved family and friends. And in addition to these marks of honor there were six pistols, a powder-tester, one gun and five swords; one of the latter was captured by Captain Green from a

captain in command of a Georgia regiment at the battle of Chancellorsville.

On presentation of the name of Frederick A. Barnes by the Standing Committee on Nomination, he was elected to membership in this Society.

Mr. Wheeler was then introduced and read a paper entitled:

A TRIP THROUGH THE WEST INDIA ISLANDS
AND THE NORTHERN COAST OF SOUTH
AMERICA.

BY HENRY M. WHEELER, ESQ.

At the outset I am almost in despair where to begin, where to end, and what to say in the middle, there is such a superabundance of material; some one island out of the many would furnish sufficient matter for an evening's entertainment. Would that I could present my tale in the exquisite flowery description of Charles Kingsley, who passed much time in Trinidad in a house still standing not far from the Governor's palace, facing a broad savannah fringed with a wilderness of tropical growth, who said no language could be too extravagant in portraying the beauty and magnificence of his surroundings. I would not, if I could, adopt the slangy and profane style of Tom Cringle's Log, which seems to have attracted the attention of subsequent writers. I should utterly fail in an attempt to paint in glowing colors the delightful pictures of Lafcadio Hearn during his two years' stay at St. Pierre in Martinique. I could not awaken an interest, as Mr. Froude did, by copying his scholarly and critical language. Many others in addition to those mentioned have written of these lands; of special interest at this time are "Four Centuries of the Panama Canal," by W. F. Johnson; "Panama, its Isthmus and Canal," by C. H. Forbes-Lindsay; "Mont Pelée and the Tragedy of Martinique,"

and "The Tower of Pelée," both by Prof. Angelo Heilprin, recently deceased. Therefore my story shall be in homely phrase, without any expectation of adding anything to the literature already in existence.

One writer speaks of Columbus distributing saints' names broadcast as he sailed through the waters of these islands. Another likens the islands to a necklace of pearls hung around the neck of the Caribbean Sea. By glancing at a map of the West Indies the aptness of the illustration is seen as their contour in the segment of a circle swings around the eastern edge of that inland sea.

Mr. Robert T. Hill, in "The Broken Necklace," says, "Stretching in a graceful curve, like a beaded necklace across the throat of the Caribbean Sea, is the chain of small islands called the Lesser Antilles. In them nature is still most beautiful, notwithstanding centuries of human spoliation and decay; they are beautiful jewels, some of priceless value, even though pierced and broken. The beauties of the Greater Antilles fade in comparison as the traveler, sailing along the inner side of these islands, passes them in rapid succession. Rising abruptly in wooded summits from a sea of glassy smoothness, they appear the acme of all that is lovely, restful and picturesque; each seems to float in the atmosphere between the azure waters and the misty clouds. Under varying influences of the cloud-tempered lights they present every shade of delicate tropical vegetation. Moistened by gentle daily rains the plants and trees give the delicious odors and aspect of a landscape after a summer shower. Nature is no less generous in her bestowal of limpid waters than in her vegetal bounties; running streams, springs, fountains and cascades are so copious and abundant that it is a wonder how a watershed so small can supply them."

A poet, seeing the islands for the first time, exclaimed:

"What triumph moves on the billows so blue?
In his car of pellucid pearl I view

With glorious pomp, on the dancing tide,
The tropic Genius proudly ride."

It may be well briefly to refer to the history of these islands. It is one of conquest, cruelty, lust, avarice, bloodshed, slaughter and extermination; the worst passions of the vilest men let loose and carried out without restraint. From their discovery by Columbus they have been, for nearly four centuries, the scene of unprovoked rapine, and the theatre of struggle for conquest by Spanish, Portuguese, British, French and Dutch. Columbus found thickly populated lands inhabited by gentle, quiet, kind, inoffensive people, who were utterly exterminated by the greed for gold and plunder. The fertile lands were drenched with the blood of countless thousands of innocent peoples. Kingsley's "most beautiful winding channels of blue water, like land-locked lakes," were crimsoned with the slain of contending naval contests, and the victims of piratical buccaneers and filibusters. These islands passed by conquest or treaty from one nationality to another, and thus were held till treaties were broken and the stronger again overcame the weaker. The final contest for supremacy between England and France took place in 1782, when DeGrasse, after the assistance rendered to this country in the closing hours of her struggle for freedom, repaired to Martinique to refit his fleet and prepare for the great conflict. His movements were closely watched from behind the neighboring island, St. Lucia, by Rodney, who, on April 12th, totally annihilated the French and made its commander prisoner.

Sugar-cane, at that time extensively cultivated in the islands, was introduced from the East, either from India or China or Persia. After the extermination of the native population no one was left to work the mines and till the soil. Negro slaves were brought from Africa to supply the deficiency, and this was the beginning of that curse which has blasted one of the fairest and kindest regions

of the earth. Nearly, if not quite, three millions of negroes were stolen and brought to the West Indies, besides the untold myriads that perished in the middle passage. St. Thomas, Jamaica and Barbados became the principal marts for the slave trade. Not only by this trade but also by the enforced and unrequited labor of the slaves, immense fortunes were made, which attracted both men of business talents, and also those who made up the worst elements of the old world. As remote as 1700 the wealth and splendor of English residents in Barbados astonished all visitors. At that time Père Labat, a French priest, visited the islands and wrote a history of them; he described them as running over with wealth, the ports full of ships and the warehouses crammed from all parts of the world. There was unbroken prosperity for 200 years. This came to an end on the abolition of slavery in 1834. Lord Brougham, in a speech delivered before the House of Lords in 1838, said 340,000 slaves were set free in Jamaica on the day when the act was passed. He also said the produce of sugar had increased, not diminished. Mr. John Bright, in a speech delivered in 1861 on the Trent affair, said England gave twenty millions sterling to liberate 800,000 slaves in the colonies. This condition did not continue. The admission into England of sugar from the United States, produced by slave labor, and the manufacture of sugar from beets, resulted in the entire suppression of the industry in some of the islands, and a great depression in others. An English writer years ago said, "Of the melancholy aspect the West Indian colonies present, our legislation concerning them since the measure of 1833 is the most fatuous, contradictory, mean and feeble that ever had existence. When we consider the amount of injustice inflicted on the colonies we can only say in sickness of heart it is unspeakable." Nothing has taken the place of the cultivation of the cane, though a few attempts to raise cotton have been made. Expensive

plantations have reverted to their primal state; palatial residences have been abandoned; unused sugar mills are numerous; these are the old windmill pattern. Some steam mills are in operation. The white people are a constantly diminishing quantity. Negroes of all shades of color abound in increasing numbers. In Barbados, which is more prosperous than most of the other islands, and may be cited as a fair example, out of a population of nearly 200,000 probably not one person in ten is white. In this island the negro must work or starve, so dense is the number; greater, it is said, than in any part of the world except China. But in other islands where he needs only the thinnest and scantiest clothing, with a thatched roof set on posts for his habitation, and where his food can be obtained by pulling up a sweet potato, or plucking a banana, or sucking a sugar-cane, or, as a last resort, by climbing a cocoa palm, the negro will not work. To solve the problem Indian coolies have been substituted, especially in Trinidad and Martinique. They have proved to be good workers, are gentle and cleanly, but they and the negroes have no great fondness for each other. Negroes are found everywhere, in the fields, the streets, in offices and stores; clerks hold places of responsibility and trust. The poorest of them are happy-go-lucky, smiling, polite. Many cannot be distinguished from white persons; the best of them are well and neatly dressed, gentlemanly and womanly, modest, polite and respectful, ever ready to do a favor. Some of the clerks in the stores would put to shame many in our northern cities by their politeness and readiness to serve customers. The women porters are models of grace, erectness, strength, swiftness of motion, and neatness in dress, but nearly every one is barefoot. Nearly all workers, men and women, go barefoot. Their feet are not models fit for a sculptor, but their owners have an elasticity of motion unsurpassed. In daily rides between Bridgetown, the capital of Barbados, and Has-

tings, one of its suburbs, I saw many of these women moving with a rapidity which an athlete might envy, their arms swinging in unison with the motions of their feet. Mr. Hearn says that it was no uncommon thing for some of these porteusses, as he called them, to travel fifty miles a day continuously, bearing one hundred pounds and upwards on their heads. He also saw four men carrying a grand piano on their heads with apparent ease. A traveler witnessed the marvelous endurance of these persons while on a drive to a mountain village: "Our carriage was drawn by a span of mules, whose qualities of perseverance seemed dominant in their natures, yet quite a number of porteuasse; passed us, and notwithstanding the frequent exclamations of the driver to 'allez, allez,' our speed never increased sufficiently to overtake them. Up the steep, winding road we saw their supple figures swaying to and fro with steady stride, balancing on their heads the heavily-laden tray, one hand resting on their hips," etc.

The head is the place for transporting articles. I saw a table on one woman's head, the ideal place for that; it took up no room, its legs did not crack any one's ribs, or threaten one's breast; near her was a trunk moving along above the crowd, to be followed by another woman bearing aloft a single stalk of sugar-cane. How handy this way of carrying! The hands are free to use in pushing a way through a crowd, to assist a neighbor, to guide a child, or lead a donkey. While the women are bearing burdens, as women often are, either physical or mental, here comes a big fellow astride a little donkey smaller than he is, and loaded besides, or riding in a diminutive cart with his knees near his nose, saying mentally perhaps, 'What's dat woman good fur 'cept to work?' White and black mingle freely in ordinary pursuits. One jostles up against a negro wherever he goes, sits alongside in tram or steam car, and in a short time becomes accustomed to the surroundings. The negro is well treated by the whites as a

matter of policy, if for no other reason. It is said that a white man, a new comer, began to order a negro in an arrogant manner, emphasizing his language with profanity, when the negro said, "Massa, you must 'member you is not in de United States." One can hardly fail to be reminded of that vital truth, "The Brotherhood of Man."

Some of the physical characteristics of these islands are noteworthy. Not to enter into any lengthy discussion of their geological nature, it will be enough to say they probably are of volcanic origin, except Barbados, which is coral in its formation and not generally included in the Caribbean group. One theory is that the space now occupied by the Caribbean Sea was once land connecting North and South America. Through some convulsion of nature the western part of this plain was elevated, creating the Isthmus of Panama, Costa Rica, Honduras, Yucatan, etc. The eastern part was depressed; its mountain ranges ran at right angles to the great ranges of the Andes and Rocky Mountains, whose trend is north and south. The islands are the summits of these mountain ranges. Were the water to be dried up, it is supposed some of them would be found to be the highest mountains in the world, for north of Puerto Rico no bottom has been reached at a depth of over 20,000 feet. Other parts of the Caribbean Sea have great depths, and east of Barbados the water suddenly becomes deep. All of the islands are mountainous, some having an elevation greater than that of Mount Washington. Martinique has no fewer than 400 hills and mountains, all of volcanic origin. Ninety of them are known by name. They inclose valleys of exquisite beauty, through which noisy streams of sparkling water rush over their rocky beds. These mountains, which constitute the chief beauty of the islands, are clothed with verdure from base to summit. It must be borne in mind that the verdure is tropical; hardly a specimen of our flora is to be seen; everything is strange and the growth luxuriant. Viewed

from a passing vessel the islands seem to be all mountains, but a ride into the interior reveals rich and productive valleys and cultivable lands. Many of the mountains rise with a gentle incline, so that cultivation is carried some distance upward. The islands produce sugar, tobacco, coffee, oranges, bananas, limes, cocoa, a little cotton, and are capable of vastly greater production. They are absolutely dependent for all food stuffs, except fruit, for cloth, hard and tinware, shoes, groceries, lumber and all implements. Nearly all these articles are supplied from the United States and Canada. No manufactures of any kind are to be seen. Sugar in its rough state is to be excepted from this statement. Attempts to refine sugar and to make chocolate have been unsuccessful. The latter article would not sell, but the cocoa shipped abroad, converted into chocolate, and returned, found a ready market. Drawn and shadow work of superior quality and of moderate cost is made on a small scale. The English have had possession of some of the islands for two centuries, but they are far from prosperous. They formerly spent large sums of money upon them, but of late years the islands have largely been left without assistance from the home government. There is little thrift or energy or ambition or progress; this condition is due in a measure to the enervating climate, the cheapness of labor, and the indifference of the government. For instance, at nearly all the islands vessels must anchor one half a mile or three and a half miles from the shore, and all freight and passengers are conveyed ashore in boats. If one suggests dredging the harbor and building a wharf, he is met with the reply such action would deprive one hundred and more stevedores and boatmen of a living, and labor is so cheap we cannot afford to do it. When men and women can be hired for from five cents to twenty-five cents a day, what else can be expected? When women will coal a steamer for a few cents a hundred baskets, why provide any easier and quicker method?

A visitor from the northern part of the United States would naturally expect to see a different flora in the Caribbean Islands, and he would not be mistaken. There is nothing to compare, however, with our graceful elms, or sturdy oaks, or shapely maples and horsechestnuts; there is not a tree to match the latter when in full bloom with its pink blossoms. No season is gorgeously decked in flaming colors like our fall. There it is eternal summer. Vegetable life is exuberant. Nature works rapidly. The barren spot of to-day is clothed with a luxuriant growth to-morrow. But human life is depressing, and the ease with which it may be sustained in idle comfort is like the land "in which it seemed always afternoon," and

"All 'round the coast the languid air did swoon,
Breathing like one that hath a heavy dream."

Easily prince of all the trees is the royal or cabbage palm. Majestic in its altitude, magnificent in its appearance, gloriously crowned with waving fronds of gigantic size, it arrests and fixes the gaze of the beholder. Like the dome of the Capitol at Washington, one never tires of it, and the eye returns again and again to its beautiful symmetry. Of all the delightful things it was the one we disliked to leave behind. The remembrance of other objects may fade, but that will remain. The trunk of a full-grown specimen has a diameter of one and a half feet or two feet through the bulge near its base; it shoots upwards straight as an arrow one hundred and twenty-five feet and more, to be crowned at its summit with fronds twenty and twenty-five feet in length. The bark is of a grayish color, perfectly smooth, and encircled with myriad rings of a lighter shade. Where the gray bark stops, the new growth of five or six feet in length is of a vivid glossy green. The pith of this part is edible and gives to the tree the name cabbage. Avenues of these palms are to be seen in many places, in no place so numerous as Bellville, one of the

suburbs of Bridgetown, Barbados. Next in interest are cocoanut palms, nearly as tall, having smaller trunks, often bent from the perpendicular by the winds, with clusters of nuts hanging from the trunk and partly concealed by the fronds. These palms appear to flourish near salt water, and are seen in great numbers on the seashore. An interesting specimen of the palms is the traveler, which resembles an enormous palm-leaf fan. There are also the date, the banana, the Brazil, the pineapple, the cone of which is in shape like that fruit, and many other palms, some of which spring out of the ground in huge clusters with fronds twenty-five feet long. Of the trees other than palms the so-called evergreen is large, bushy and shapely, entirely unlike, however, our evergreens; the tamarind, large and spreading, with fine leaves like our cassia; the mahogany, bearing a fruit like a potato in color and shape; when ripe and hard, the shell bursts and discloses the seed attached to the stem; some mahogany trees grow to a great size; the woman's tongue, covered with long yellow pods filled with seeds, which, when dry and shaken by the wind, continually rattle; the sighing, with soft, green needles, like our white pine, producing a sound similar to that as the wind moves through its branches; the grape, which bears clusters of green, tasteless berries like our green half-grown grapes; the manchineel, having fruit like an apple, but its fruit, leaves and sap are poisonous; the pawpaw, fifteen or twenty feet high, producing a melon-like fruit, an appetizing breakfast dish; the breadfruit, large and bushy, with broad, glossy leaves, in the midst of which are seen the round, green balls five or six inches in diameter; the mango, whose fruit is considered a delicacy by some persons; the cocoa, tall, and bearing the nuts in a large, oblong pod; the banyan, or Indian fig, of great girth, its shoots falling down to the ground, taking root and increasing the size of the parent tree; the rope, its tendrils becoming a perfect snarl, impenetrable except by cutting; the Norfolk

pine, tended so carefully in our hothouses, towering seventy feet into the air; the saman, a large umbrella-like tree; the flamboyant; the nutmeg, bearing a round shell in which the nut is concealed; the guava, from which a jelly is made; the cannon-ball, whose fruit is about the size of a 36-pound shot, and when ripe is soft and delicious; the shell, when dried, makes a handy drinking vessel; last, but grandest, the Ceiba or silk cotton, of great size and age, whose trunk is curiously supported by projections from the sides just like buttresses supporting a wall. This tree is held in superstitious reverence by the natives. A specimen in Barbados is said to be 1100 years old! Who knows? The largest one seen was at Nassau.

Amongst the flowering shrubs the poinsettia, covered with large vermilion flowers; the bougainvillæa, a climber having most brilliant scarlet blossoms, named for its discoverer, General Bougainville, a navigator, soldier, botanist and scholar [Mirabeau, in the course of a speech at the French National Assembly May 22, 1790, referred to "what M. de Bougainville said at the sea fight of the Grenadines," etc.]; the hibiscus reared in our hothouses, bearing large and showy red flowers, their petals streaked with white, and resembling the Jonsonii lily; the jacaranda, a Brazilian shrub, bearing trumpet-shaped flowers, are the most common. Begonias and coleus of great size and brilliancy are not infrequent. Of our common garden plants there were zinnias, verbenas, gladiolus and Jacob's coat.

The usual accompaniments of the departure of a vessel are so familiar that my account of our leaving will be brief. The Parima of the Quebec S. S. Line, advertised to sail from New York at three o'clock in the afternoon of Jan. 31, 1907, did not cast off from the wharf till eight, and about midnight came to anchor off Sandy Hook. The next morning snow covered the decks, but by night it had

entirely disappeared under the influence of warmer weather. Besides the passengers, the steamer carried horses and mules destined for the islands. They were packed so close together that they were forced to stand during sixteen days. One long-eared member of the number, learning by the use of his ears without doubt of the coming life of toil far from his native land, quietly gave up the ghost in a few days and was tossed overboard to be food for sharks. On the second day out we entered the Gulf Stream and crossed it diagonally, a distance of 120 miles on that day and the next. Heavy clothing began to be discarded, and by the fifth day thin summer garments took their place. By this time most of the passengers were in their usual spirits, though many had been in the condition of Dr. Holmes, who, when asked if he had done any literary work on his voyage to Europe, said he was a daily contributor to the Atlantic. Five days passed without sight of land, and when it was announced that we were to have our first view of an island, all other thoughts were laid aside. Late in the afternoon land was said to be ahead, but most of us accepted the statement by faith, for good glasses would not reveal the view to landsmen's eyes. Soon, however, a hazy cloud appeared on the horizon, which gradually became the dim outlines of mountain peaks. As we approached nearer, the contour of the tops against the sky was beautiful, as its long line extended each way before us. Night closed in upon the steamer as it came to anchor outside the harbor, and we had had our first dim view of St. Thomas. Early the next morning the steamer entered the spacious circular land-locked harbor of St. Thomas, through the narrow channel between two hills, and was anchored about a third of a mile from the shore directly opposite Charlotte Amalia, the capital of the island. Before us hung an exquisite painting of the town against a background of mountains covered with verdure, and the bright, beautiful azure sky above—a pic-

ture never to be forgotten. The town is spoken of by writers as built on three hills, which is somewhat misleading. The base of the mountains comes down quite near to the shore. Three spurs swell out from the slope downward with valleys between, and on these spurs and in the valleys the town lies. The roofs of the houses are painted red, and many of the houses themselves are painted or tinted of various colors. Gardens filled with luxuriant growths of palms, bread-fruit, mangoes, tamarind, and other trees, with trailing vines on lattices, give tone to the picture. A narrow, winding street parallel with the shore of the bay runs through the town, and into it at right angles streets come down from the declivities.

The mountain slopes are dotted with villas, resorts of the wealthy, to escape the heat of the town. For a long time St. Thomas was the resort of pirates and buccaneers.

Blue Beard and Black Beard castles, relics of former rough and lawless times, were pointed out, the former the residence of the agent of the steamship company, a pompous Briton wearing full mutton-chop whiskers and a heavy mustache on his face and a white helmet on his head, the common headgear of all that region. The Governor's residence was prominent on the hillside, illuminated for a ball held there the second evening of our stay. Our anticipated pleasure at sight of palms was sadly broken by the view of straggling trees on the shore, battered and drooping. As soon as the steamer came in sight rowboats put off from the shore and our ears were assailed with vociferous shoutings for the privilege of conveying us to land. These were followed by immense lighters, with a large number of stevedores, to whom the removal of freight was given up. They were preceded by a well-dressed negro in a boat, who mounted the steps and in a pompous manner gave orders for the work to be done. It was a never-ending source of interest to watch the operation of loading and unloading at all stopping places. The

skill and speed with which freight was transferred from the steamer's hold to the lighters—most of which held several tons—was wonderful to our unaccustomed eyes. This was accompanied with shoutings, sometimes so earnest and seemingly angry we expected to see blows exchanged and some one laid flat on his back, or knocked overboard, but nothing of this kind occurred; and we concluded that the noise eased the toil. A bargain was made with a boatman to carry us ashore for a shilling apiece and return, and our feet soon were on the first of the Caribbean Islands to be visited. The characteristics of this town will fairly well describe those of the other towns seen by us. The streets are narrow, with deep gutters at one or both sides, unpaved, but smooth and hard from the trampling of many feet; no sidewalks, or a space wide enough for one person, irregularly paved with rough stones or bricks; buildings are mostly of two stories, occasionally of three, built of stone or brick, and covered with stucco, and wooden ones abutting directly on the street, with overhanging balconies and piazzas on the second story. The windows are destitute of glass and are screened with blinds or lattices. The first story is rarely used for living purposes, but is occupied by shops and store-rooms. This description applies mostly to the streets in the busy parts of the town. Away from these the dwellings are generally of wood, many of them set in the midst of pretty surroundings. Houses are built to let in the greatest quantity of air and to keep out the sun's rays. In some of the towns not a pane of glass is to be seen, in others a few windows of the better class are glazed. There are many stores of modest dimensions, some of generous capacity. As one enters the wide open door of a store, the beams overhead and joists of the building, usually whitewashed or painted white, are noticeable. There are displayed for sale largely the same class of goods seen here. Many of them are like our old "country" stores, where can be

bought anything from a nail to a piece of delicate lace or drawn work. The larger part of these goods is from America, and some of them are much cheaper than with us. There are department stores in Barbados and Trinidad which will rival in size and variety some of ours, where one can buy a horse, a mule, a donkey, a cart, an American carriage and harness, shovels, hoes, chains, furniture, crockery, fine dress goods, men's suits, jewelry, watches, diamonds, tin and enameled ware and hundreds of other articles. There are the usual government buildings in St. Thomas, which is a Dutch island: barracks; a small park near the landing; a Danish and a Methodist church. People all walk in the streets, food of various kinds is displayed by the roadside, small boys barefoot, and some with a wrapping of a few rags run after us, offering their services in hopes of getting a penny; carriages and primitive carts drawn by diminutive horses all made an impression long to be remembered. There is a coaling station here, and we had our first view of women coaling a steamer, carrying the coal in baskets on their heads, and they did it rapidly, making the air ring with their songs. This was one of similar scenes in our trip. The vessel discharged over 3000 pieces of freight, weighed anchor at ten o'clock after two nights' stay, and steamed out of the harbor. Here let me say that the amount of freight which a steamer carries is beyond belief to one who has not seen it. This steamer discharged large amounts of cargo at eight islands, and when she left Barbados for Demerara, she had still on board over 8000 pieces for the latter place, and she was by no means a large vessel when compared with others. Leaving the island we saw on our right, far away, what we were disappointed in not seeing on our entrance, a rock of snowy whiteness standing out of the water, having the appearance of a full-rigged ship under sail. Seen with strong glasses the illusion was not lessened. It is called Ship Rock. The story is told of a

French warship during the contest with England which sent a summons to this supposed vessel to hold up. No notice being taken of the summons the Frenchman discovered his mistake after the discharge of a full broadside at the unoffending rock. Our course from St. Thomas was in a straight line towards St. Croix, so that for a long distance Charlotte Amalia was in view and the long line of the beautiful mountains of the island. Soon St. Croix was reached, noted for the manufacture of rum. We were charmed with the approach; its many mountains, under the light of the noon-day sun, called forth our admiration as peak and valley and gully and sides, covered with verdure, changed hues when seen from different points. Fields of sugar-cane in patches of varied colors extended from the shore up the mountain sides. We did not find the town Fredericksstad interesting; houses cheap and streets dirty. The next day we passed the small islands of Saba and St. Eustatia, the former a single cone, in the crater of which at an elevation of over 800 feet is the town of Bottom, in which a few hundred people dwell, who are boat-builders and fine seamen. It is said most of the mariners die at sea, and it is fortunate, because there is not room on the island for graves. Wood is hauled up to their abode, boats are built and let down to the ocean. We afterwards met one of the men who was master and owner of a schooner.

These two islands belong to Holland. At one time the Dutch accumulated large store of naval and military goods on St. Eustatia, which they sold to other nations. During the Revolutionary War our vessels obtained supplies from this source. When England discovered this, she sent Rodney with a great fleet to destroy the stores, who captured \$15,000,000 worth of guns and ammunition, and sailed for England with them, but the French intercepted him and captured twenty-one of his vessels. A writer remarks, "Had Rodney gone to the help of Cornwallis instead of wasting

time at this island, the history of the United States might have been materially changed.’’

Just beyond these two islands is St. Martin’s, not discernible in the distance. It is said that a Frenchman and a Dutchman landed on the island at the same time. As neither could lay claim to it for his nation, they agreed to walk round its circumference in opposite directions, and their meeting-place would be one end of a line drawn thence to their starting-point, and the part on either side of that line should belong to their respective countries. The Frenchman was spry, walked faster than the Dutchman, and thus acquired the larger share. The former acquired twenty-one square miles, the latter seventeen. The next island visited was St. Christopher, or St. Kit’s, as it is usually called; the capital is Basseterro and is larger and better built than either of the others we have seen. Teams were secured on landing and a ride of seven miles into the country was taken over an excellent macadam road. Many cane and some cotton fields were passed, and we were shown through a sugar factory, seeing the process of manufacture from the stalk in the yard to the sugar in bags. All refining is done at the North. A field of cane in its various stages seen at a little distance strongly resembles one of our fields of Indian corn. The bright green patches of it add materially to the beauty of the landscape. The cane grows to the height of six and eight feet, according to the richness of the soil. The stalks are much larger than those of corn, and when fully grown make a dense mass which it would be difficult to pass through. The crop is ready to gather when the leaves on the stalk for two-thirds of its length are dead. Each stalk is cut down with a machette, the dead leaves pulled off, the upper green part cut away, and the rest packed on a cart drawn by three yokes of oxen. The upper green part is used for fodder or left on the ground to dry and be burned. With the feed molasses is given. Arrived at the mill the cane is

passed between powerful rollers, which extract the sap so thoroughly that the refuse is dry enough to furnish fuel for the boilers. On our ride we saw hedges of caeti, impervious to man or beast, and single specimens twenty feet tall. The markets are prominent features in all the towns; we passed through a fish market on our return to the pier. If one wants anything in the line of food, the market is the place to get it. Our tastes might be offended if we were obliged to eat some of the articles exposed in these places. In a large square shaded by trees, or underneath a building, venders, chiefly women, of food and drink and culinary articles, display their wares spread out on the ground or floor, while the proprietor squats or stands beside them. The surrounding country for a long distance furnishes the supply brought in from many a humble patch of ground and rustie hut on the heads of the women. It is a busy place on Saturday evening, where hundreds gather to buy and gossip. After seeing the unloading of hundreds of bags of flour and meal I asked a storekeeper if those articles were sold by the bag. He said rarely; the people were so poor they could buy only a few cents' worth at a time. A ride in company with a dozen friends to such a place on the top of a drag drawn by four horses, the adjoining streets packed from side to side with thousands of negroes, shouting, screaming, cheering and chaffing, was a scene worth witnessing. Indeed, it was one of the show sights of the city.

The native horses are small but wiry; they weigh from 500 to 700 pounds. One would not believe that a pair of them could take four of us in a common sized carryall fourteen miles under a hot sun without flagging, but they did, and at a good gait too. The little donkeys excited our constant wonder and sympathy; trudging along under great burdens, with meek submission, they exhibited a wonderful example of patience. On this island we met begging for the first time; it was not extremely offensive

or troublesome, but subsequent experience led us to see that the itching palm was everywhere, from the little toddler holding up to you his tiny hand, saying in a scarcely audible voice, "Massa, a penny," to the great, broad palm of the man on shipboard, or elsewhere, who ought to be ashamed of his degradation. A lady of our party, while waiting for a tram-car, quietly stroked the head of a donkey standing near. The owner of the animal, a stalwart negro, came forward and said, "Thrippence, lady, if you stroke my donkey's head." It is said, and there seems to be truth in the utterance, that steamships, railroads and hotels countenance and encourage tipping, so called, by paying their help so little that they are forced to beg. The practice is neither more nor less than robbery. A traveler must add a considerable sum to his ordinary expenses if he would go comfortably and escape snubbing. An item in a paper of recent date reports that King Edward of England is opposed to the practice and is taking steps to stop it.

Leaving St. Kit's and going in a southeasterly direction we passed Nevis, chiefly noted as the birthplace of Alexander Hamilton, and the residence of Mrs. Fanny Nisbit, widow of Dr. Nisbit and niece of Mr. Herbert, President of the island, who was wed by Admiral Nelson; and Montserrat, both small and formerly producing sugar. The latter was at one time inhabited by negroes who spoke with an Irish brogue. They were descendants, through intermixture with the negroes, of the soldiers whom Cromwell deported after the siege of Fredah or Drogheda in Ireland Sept. 10-12, 1649. An Irishman went to Barbados intending to remain there. As the vessel cast anchor in the roadstead of Bridgetown, he leaned over the rail and hailed a black boatman. "Say, Cuffee, phwat's the chance for a lad ashore?" "Good, yer honor, if yer not afraid of wurruk; but me name's not Cuffee, an' plaze ye, it's Pat Mulvaney." "Mulvaney! And do yez mane ter say yer

Oirish?" "Oi do." "The saints dafind us! An' how long have yez bin out here?" "A mather uv tin year or so." "Tin year? An' yez black es me hat! May the divil fly away wid me if I iver set fut on this ould oisland. Save me sowl. I tuk yez fur a naygur!"

Recently, in the papers I have seen this story revamped, as follows: A customer, on entering a delicatessen store, heard a very black negro ask in good German for pumpernickel, senfgurken, rotheruben-salad. The customer, in surprise, asked the negro where he learned to speak German. "Where? Why, I am a German. When I came to this country, I was white, but we Germans all grow black after a few years here." The negro was a porter in a German business-house. The appearance of the island of Antigua, as we approached it, was that of a conglomeration of mountains thrown together in great confusion; the entrance to its harbor was guarded by a great rock resembling a huge rat. The steamer anchored two miles from St. John's, the capital. The town has an English church and a Wesleyan: a public library, post office, etc.; the streets are clean and at right angles to each other. Tropical foliage is abundant. A negro policeman in uniform, as neat and trim as any in Boston, politely guided our way. On the front doors of several houses we noticed old-fashioned brass knockers. Our visit was made peculiarly pleasant by an afternoon tea at the residence of the American Consul, Mr. Anderson. Guadeloupe is a large, double island belonging to France; it is divided in twain by a very narrow and shallow inlet of the sea; the western part is mountainous, the eastern flat. Point a Pêtre is its chief port and is a bustling place, having large sugar works. The island was named by Colonel Guadeloupe for Sainte Marie de Guadeloupe of Estramadura. Formerly it was infested with the deadly snake, the fer de lance. Here freight was transferred to the shore in large scows square at both ends, propelled by oars. Those at Antigua were

furnished with sails. Dominica, one of the most beautiful of the islands, is said to be the scene of Tennyson's Enoch Arden; the poem took on a new beauty and pathos read under the shadow of its towering mountains, while we looked, perchance.

"Here on the beach a hundred years ago," where
"Long lines of cliff breaking have left a chasm."

The botanical garden of many acres contains specimens of all the tropical plants; the smooth, close-cut grass, the first seen, reminded us of our northern lawns. Near the entrance a long line of eucalyptus trees stretched their tall branches upwards. Mounting a hill at one side of the grounds, an extended panorama met our eyes; the garden lay at our feet; the town was just beyond. Stretching far away was the broad, blue ocean, and at our backs the line of mountains clothed in green. Below, in a stream running over its rocky bed, were women washing clothes and spreading them on the rocks to dry—nature's wash-tub—a scene often repeated at the different islands. Mr. Hearn says, in describing such a scene at Martinique, that the washerwomen slapped the clothes on the racks in such a manner that the most delicate fabrics were uninjured and buttons were not wrenched off. Water flowed from hydrants in the streets. In an old curiosity shop a school-marm was teaching half a dozen pickaninnies the rudiments of knowledge while we were making purchases. We entered the public library, a place to entice one to spend an afternoon in its spacious, cool, airy rooms, or on its broad veranda looking out on the ocean at its feet. Not many books filled its shelves, and its tables were not laden with papers and magazines, but it was one of the cheeriest spots we had seen. A tall negro carrying a bamboo-cane stuck to us through all our wanderings and told of some things he knew and of others he did not. At this island freight was transferred in small boats about twenty-five feet long and

three or four feet wide. It seemed a ticklish job to load into them boxes, barrels, casks, lumber, etc., while they were bobbing up and down on the waves, but no mishap occurred. A few descendants of the old Carib race are said to be living on the island. Francis Drake, on his third voyage to the West Indies, passed between Guadeloupe and Dominica, and landed at Marygalante, a small island near at hand, to obtain water. Martinique is another of the French islands and exhibits signs of prosperity. We met Mr. Martin, the American Consul, and his wife. The Empress Josephine was born at St. Pierre, and a fine marble statue is erected in one of the squares of Fort de France to her memory. A writer says: "The chief charm to the visitor is the marble statue of Josephine. It was the gift of Napoleon III to the loving folk of the island to perpetuate her memory in the land of her birth. It stands near the centre of the Savannah, surrounded by nine tall, stately palms. A gown of the First Empire encircles the gracious form; the right arm is gently folded while the other rests on a medallion of Napoleon. A drapery of mist had clothed the marble form, then with one of those sudden outbursts of tropic splendor, like a meteor of the night, there arose from out the veil of gray, in a glistening mantle of stone, the resplendent vision of Josephine, the once idolized Empress of the French." Lafcadio Hearn writes of this statue: "The Savane, the great, green, public square, with its grand tamarinds and sabliers, would be worth the visit alone, even were it not made romantic by the marble memory of Josephine. I went to look at the white dream of her there, a creation of master sculptors. It seemed to be absolutely lovely. Such is the human charm of the figure that you almost fancy you are gazing at the living presence. When you look straight up into the sweet creole face you can believe she lives. All the wonderful West Indian charm of the woman is there. Over violet space of

summer sea, through the vast splendor of azure light, she is looking back to the place of her birth, back to beautiful, drowsy Trois-Islets—and always with the same half-dreaming, half-plaintive smile—unutterably touching.” This island was also the abode of Madame de Maintenon for several years in her youth. Cocoa might become a profitable industry, as it can be grown readily.

I must hurry on to St. Lucia with the beautiful entrance to its land-locked harbor. The view of Castries, its capital, vies with St. Thomas’ capital, Charlotte Amalia, for beauty. It lies along the crescent of the bay, its houses climbing up the mountain sides, snuggled in amongst the tropical trees and vines. A walk up one of the steep, winding and well-kept roads gave us a fine view of the town, and on the mountain sides the abandoned barracks for soldiers, on which the English government expended over \$10,000,000; also, an uncompleted inclined railway to run to the top of one of the high hills, to be operated by hydraulic power. The botanical garden was inferior to that at Dominica; it was overcrowded, but contained fine specimens of banyan, bamboo and nutmeg trees. The most remarkable feature of the island was the two pitons at one end; conical hills, about one mile apart, rising out of the ocean, yet connected with the main land, one being 2400 feet high, the other 2600. One is an almost perfect cone and nearly inaccessible. St. Lucia formerly was the home of the *fer de lance*, the snake whose bite was nearly instant death. St. Vincent lay out of our track south of St. Lucia, about 100 miles west of Barbados. On it is a volcano, which burst out with a terrific explosion in 1812, by which 10,000 persons were killed. The dust from it was thrown 16,000 feet upwards, and three inches of it fell on Barbados. It was also visited by a terrible hurricane in 1898. An inconvenience to the traveler to these islands, and indeed to any islands, is that once landed he is a prisoner for a time; he can neither take the next morning’s train, nor

drive nor walk to the next island, which is so far removed that a sail-boat would not be of service. For this reason our stay at Barbados was prolonged to ten days, when five or even three would have been sufficient. However, it is an attractive place for an invalid in which to escape our winter season. The trade winds are constant and temper the heat of that latitude. Physically considered, it is the least interesting of the islands; it possesses neither mountains nor forests; its fertile lands are covered with vast fields of sugar-cane. Bridgetown, its capital, is densely populated; it possesses a Trafalgar square, with a monument to Lord Nelson; a handsome and commodious public library recently erected; a Y. M. C. A.; numerous well-appointed stores, and a colonial bank. There is a very primitive tramway, and American horses and carriages are numerous. Mules perform the heavy work, but the small, patient donkey is the chief beast of burden. At Hastings, a suburb about two miles away, is located the Marine Hotel, the chief public house, and the dwellings of the richer class. One steam railway, as primitive as the tramway, extends across the island to the eastern shore. A network of good hard roads covers the whole territory. The one thing dear to Americans is the fact that George Washington, when a young man, spent three months there with his brother in a house which we saw. This is not to be relegated to the numerous myths about him. Scattered over the island are many of the picturesque stone mills for grinding cane worked by the wind. At Bathsheba on the eastern side of the island is a large hotel, the Beachmont, on elevated ground overlooking the ocean, and a small one, the Atlantis, where we passed a quiet day sitting on its cool piazza, from which we watched the broad ocean, the surf at our feet; and the immense rocks worn into grotesque shapes by the action of the water. During the afternoon several large fishing-boats came in laden with fish, and soon, as if by magic, a hundred and more persons,

mostly women, sprang out of the ground apparently—there were no houses in sight—and gathered round the boats to purchase fish. The principal product of the catch was flying-fish; several king-fish, each six or eight feet long, were also caught. Presently the crowd began to melt away, going singly and by twos and threes in various directions, some having a few fish in their trays for home use probably, others bearing trays full, for barter it may be. When flying-fish are abundant, a shilling will buy a hundred of them. They are excellent and were frequently on the table of the steamer.

Codrington College, established by a gift of several estates from General Codrington, is situated north of Bathsheba, and is affiliated with one of the English colleges. Belleville, to which reference has already been made, is the handsomest of Bridgetown's suburbs; its streets are at right angles, and lined with royal palms, and it is the residential section. The United States Weather Bureau has a station in the city. The coast is well protected by substantial light-houses.

Leaving Barbados by the Royal Mail packet, *Tagus*, we steamed southward and passed a few hours at Port of Spain, the capital of Trinidad, entering the harbor in the Gulf of Paria through the Dragon's Mouth, and leaving it by the same passage. The island, which is large and shaped like an anvil, is separated from South America by a passage called the Serpent's Mouth, both names having been bestowed by Columbus. We regretted our inability to spend a few days on this island, where the tropical growth surpasses that of other places we had visited. The asphalt or pitch-lake furnishes much of that material used in the United States. The capital is a progressive city; its wide, well-paved streets, asphalt walks, electric cars, spacious squares, handsome houses and large stores, contrasted strongly with other cities. Gardens attached to substantial houses were filled with beautiful trees, shrubs,

and flowers. In the outskirts is a large and well-stocked botanical garden, adjoining an extensive park, formerly a sugar plantation, fronting on which is the commodious and fashionable Queen's Park Hotel and the bishop's residence. A stop of a few hours was made at La Guayra, the seaport of Caracas, the capital of Venezuela, four miles distant in the mountains, but twenty-four miles by rail. This is a busy but unattractive place. A fort on the mountain-side, back of the town, formerly commanded the harbor. No one was allowed to land without permission, and only a few availed themselves of that. Kingsley, in "Westward Ho," locates one of his piratical sea fights at this place. As we skirted the shore of South America we looked in vain for the snow-clad mountains, but clouds concealed them from view. Savinilla in Colombia, the seaport of Barranquilla, is a collection of mud hovels thatched and wretched in appearance. The steamer warped in to the end of a pier said to be more than a mile in length. We paid \$86 apiece for round-trip tickets to Barranquilla, fifteen miles inland by rail, a place best remembered by being forgotten. It is situated on the Magdalena River, navigable for vessels of light draft several hundred miles. It is the chief seaport of Colombia; has a large cathedral undergoing repairs; several imposing buildings of stone or brick stuccoed; streets at right angles unpaved, inches deep in sand; houses stuccoed and tinted of various colors; a hot, dusty, disagreeable place, glaring in the sunlight and almost entirely destitute of trees. Spanish is the only language spoken. It manufactures on a large scale handsome, light-colored pressed bricks. Dust and heat and five dollars paid for blacking my shoes, and a miserable tram-car dragged along by an ancient mule, are the most vivid recollections of the place. The approach to the ancient city of Cartagena was picturesque; its harbor is deep and completely land-locked; at a long distance from the city the channel runs very near a sandy point covered with

palms, in the midst of which are partially concealed thatched huts. On another point of land was an abandoned stone fort, and on the opposite shore a smaller one; towering far above us the white walls of an old monastery glistened; in front, still a long way off, the many-colored walls of the city's buildings became more and more distinct; they indicated a large and well-built city, and such it proved to be. The steamer was warped round to the wharf, and in a short time we were conveyed in cars into the city. Its streets are narrow and somewhat winding; its buildings solid and imposing. We spent a delightful hour at the old Inquisition, now owned and occupied by Bartolomé Martinez Bossio, whose hospitality was unbounded. The building bounds one side of a square filled with trees and shrubs, and ornamented with an equestrian statue of General Bolivar. We were pleasantly welcomed at the American Consulate by Mr. MacMaster, its occupant. Altogether the city was the most substantial we had visited; it probably retained to a large degree the characteristic of Spanish cities. Drake, in 1572, cruised in the waters about Cartagena, making friends with the Cimмерoons, and "saw across the bright, sunny water, blue and flashing, gleaming with the silvery arrows of the flying fish." The Cimмерoons were negroes who fled from the cruelty of their Spanish masters and formed a community by themselves.

Our next stop was at Colon, the northern terminus of the Panama railroad, brought into great prominence at this time by the building of the Panama Canal. It is a low, dirty spot, somewhat improved of late, but entirely unworthy of the future terminus of the canal. Wherever the United States has put its foot on the isthmus, the disparity between the old and the new is an object lesson to be studied by the natives. We went by rail three-fourths of the distance to Panama, and stopped at Empire, one mile from the Culebra Cut, and saw work going on much

as it is done here in the building of a railroad or excavating a basin for a reservoir, only on a larger scale—more men, more and larger steam shovels, more engines and dump cars. While the work done at this point is enormous in the aggregate, it is a mere scratching of the surface compared with the finished job. The mountain was pointed out, from whose summit Balboa had his view of the Pacific Ocean Sept. 25, 1513. Drake, in his march across the isthmus in 1573, climbed a tree on top of a hill and saw there to the north, like a bright blue jewel, the Atlantic Ocean, whence he came, “and there to the south, some thirty miles away, that sea of which he had heard such golden reports.” He looked at the wonderful South Sea, and “besought Almighty God of His goodness to give him life and leave to sail once in an English ship in that sea.” Five years later his desire was fulfilled. At Gatun, seven miles from Colon, it was said the great dam is to be built which is to control the Chagres River. But why waste time when so many better qualified have written and are writing on this subject? In the erection of its buildings the United States seems to be doing all it can from a sanitary point of view for its workmen. Although we were about eight degrees north of the equator the heat seemed no greater than at St. Thomas, and not so oppressive as it is sometimes at Worcester.

You will expect to hear something about the destruction of St. Pierre and Kingston. The island of Martinique lies between the islands Dominica on the north and St. Lucia on the south; is forty miles long and fifteen miles wide, and contains about four hundred square miles; it belongs to France. Mont Pelée, with its Morues or smaller mountains, occupies nearly the whole of the northern end of the island. It rises to the height of a little more than four thousand feet. Its sides are furrowed with deep ravines, and twenty-five streams issue from its declivities, most of

them being rivulets in the dry season, but during the rainy months become swollen torrents, choking their beds with mud and boulders. The earliest recorded eruption of the volcano occurred in 1762, June 22. For nearly a century thereafter the mountain was as quiet and harmless as any other elevation. In 1851 it broke forth and did considerable damage, and the ashes belched forth from it were carried long distances. From that date to the recent disaster it had maintained a quiescent state.

Saint Pierre, the capital of the island, was situated on the shore of the ocean, four miles southwest from Mont Pelée, in full view of the volcano. The city had no harbor, but was built along an open roadstead for two miles, its buildings stretching back from the shore up the incline of the hills inland. It was the natural outlet of a rich cane and cacao district. Bankers, merchants, traders and shippers congregated there. The wealthy inhabitants had many handsome villas on the hill slopes. Its gaiety was compared to that of Paris and its life to that of Rome, a city of gay and open life and low moral tone. Thirty thousand people dwelt and carried on business there. Its botanical garden was unsurpassed. It had an imposing cathedral, a lyceum, a hospital and many substantial stone edifices. Water flowed continually through its streets and from its aqueducts and fountains; its gardens blossomed with tropical foliage, and it was spoken of as one of the most beautiful of the West Indian cities. The river Roxalene, a picturesque stream, flowed through its northern quarter.

In April, 1902, Mont Pelée began to show signs of life; rumblings were heard, steam and smoke were seen to issue from its summit. These symptoms increased and became more violent from day to day. On the 25th and 26th of the month terrific explosions of rock and ashes occurred. Many of the citizens were greatly alarmed and some left their places, to be more than filled by those entering, for safety. A sense of security settled on the

people, fostered by the officials and the utterances of the daily paper, *Les Colonies*, which repeated that the city was safer than any other place and there was no danger. "What place so safe as St. Pierre?" it said. This feeling found expression in the planning of an excursion to the top of the mountain for May 4th, but before that day came the appearance of the volcano was so terrifying that it was given up. May 1st everything was covered with white ashes, and by May 3d it was said "the rain of ashes never ceases." At half past twelve May 5th a torrent of boiling mud mingled with steam, in some places one hundred feet deep, rushed down the gorge of the *Rivière Blanche*, and in three minutes traveled three miles and buried many feet deep a large sugar factory with the small village connected with it and all the persons, 150, therein, and continued its course to the seashore, the contour of which was largely changed, and ended by capsizing a yacht five hundred feet from the land. Prior to this ashes had been falling in Fort de France, a city a dozen miles distant, which caused great consternation. May 8th, at ten minutes of eight in the morning, an awful explosion, accompanied with deafening noises, thundering and lightning, took place; an opening in the side of the volcano was rent and from it an immense black and brown cloud shot forth horizontally, struck St. Pierre in two minutes, and in a moment there was not a living person or thing in that beautiful city of thirty thousand people save two negroes, who were subsequently rescued—one a prisoner in the jail by name Auguste Ciparis, the other, Lion Compère-Léandre, both badly burned. Eighteen to twenty vessels in the roadstead were destroyed by the same blast. The agent of this destruction was steam-heated to one thousand or twelve hundred degrees, mixed with fine hot dust or pulverized lava. Every building was destroyed, the sap in all growing things was dried up; fire followed and all things inflammable were burned. Subsequently, ashes cov-

ered bodies and ruins so that no other interment was made.

On the 20th of the same May another similar explosion, as fearful as the first, took place, completing what may have been left undone by the first. During the interval between these two explosions the volcano was throwing up steam and ashes to the height of six miles, with roars of thunder and flashes of lightning, which were heard one thousand miles distant, and the ashes were carried nine hundred miles out to sea. The roar was appalling. Could all the furnaces in the world unite in one simultaneous blast no such sound as that of the volcano could be produced.

Morne Rouge, a beautiful village two miles from St. Pierre, in the mountains fourteen hundred feet above the sea, in the midst of one of the most charming regions conceivable, the summer resort of many of the rich people of St. Pierre, was utterly wiped out of existence on the 20th of the following August by an eruption of the volcano like that which destroyed St. Pierre, and all its people, numbering nearly two thousand, met an instantaneous death. Several other smaller places, Ajoupa Bouillon, Le Prêcheur and Basse Point, were destroyed at the same time, accompanied by fearful explosions and clouds of steam and ashes, vivid lightnings, incessant playing in, around and out of the clouds. Small streams became torrents, bringing down water, boiling mud and boulders, some of great size, which in places covered acres of ground. For eight square miles around, a smiling, fruitful garden, teeming with cane and cacao, and various tropical fruit and ornamental trees, became in a moment utter desolation and barrenness.

On the 15th of October, 1902, what Professor Heilprin, from whose narrative much of this description has been derived, called the "Tower of Pelée," nature's monument to the thirty thousand dead, began to rise from the

cone of the crater, and in forty days it had reached an elevation of one thousand feet; how far it extended below the opening it was impossible to tell. The diameter, at its base, was five hundred feet, and it tapered upward to the top. The power required to lift this core of stone was enormous beyond comprehension. Its elevation was accompanied by violent detonations, bursts of steam and ash cloud; the dome of the crater was brilliantly incandescent, glowing with fire, which was reflected on the clouds overhead. The disturbance caused by these eruptions far surpassed all others, and the illuminations exceeded all recorded ones. It is the most remarkable volcano of which there is any knowledge. The electrical displays were brilliant beyond description. The tower began to disintegrate early in July, 1903, and by the middle of August more than half of it had disappeared. Nothing remains of it above the summit of the volcano.

As we steamed along the western side of the island Mont Pelée was pointed out, but its upper portion was hidden in clouds and jets of steam which did not lift while we were in sight. The captain turned from his course toward St. Pierre, and stopped for twenty minutes as near to the shore as it was safe to do, by reason of the shallowness of the water, to allow a view of the place. Complete desolation appeared as far as the eye could reach; not a living object was in sight; there was very little semblance of buildings; everything was destroyed except the stone walls and those were crushed and broken down. We were looking on a cemetery. The few remaining white walls in rows seemed to be the marking places of the dead. It is said by those who have visited the region that nature, ever kind to mother earth, has begun to heal the terrible scars and to clothe again the desolate valleys and hillsides with verdure. Probably the next generation will only learn of this awful wreck of lives and country from the tales of their ancestors. We heard the comments of two men on this

disaster and that at Kingston; they were judgments from heaven; the places were so wicked God could endure them no longer. By all accounts, St. Pierre was a wicked place, no worse; perhaps, than some others. It is not for us to judge, especially when we call to remembrance the lesson taught by Jesus Christ in connection with the fall of the tower of Siloam.

The first reports of disaster are apt to be exaggerated. When the news of the late disaster at Jamaica reached us, if I remember correctly, it was that Port Royal was destroyed and the site of it was sinking into the water. That was the fate of a former town of the same name in 1692. The present town of a few hundred inhabitants is situated at the end of a long spit of sand, which runs out from the main land and forms a perfect breakwater that incloses a spacious harbor, wherein hundreds of vessels could ride at anchor in safety if it were properly dredged. The town is five or six miles from Kingston by land and half that distance across the bay. A vessel entering the harbor sails west, rounds the point, sails east and then north to Kingston. Approaching the harbor we saw two steamers wrecked on the outer shore of the spit, quite a distance from the point: one, the *Princess Louise*, a large vessel fitted up expensively as a yacht, was run ashore by the gross carelessness of its captain, who immediately went into his cabin and shot himself; this was before the earthquake. The other took place after the earthquake and was due to the destruction of one lighthouse, the captain having been lured to his ruin by another. As we drew toward the town of Port Royal no evidences of disaster could be seen and we set down the tale to a reporter's imagination. On reaching the point, however, dead palms were seen standing in the water, and it was there a portion of the point had been sunk as well as an island opposite, on which was the demolished lighthouse. Nearing Kingston few indications of the damage were seen, and it was not till the

next morning, when we entered the town, that the full comprehension of the dire calamity was revealed. The entire business part of the place is utterly destroyed. One could look down a long vista of one of the principal streets and see nothing on either side but broken walls and piles of bricks. Passage through the streets, which seem not to have been disturbed, had been made, and that was all that had been done. Prosperous business men and small traders lost everything, and they have nothing to even pay laborers for cleaning up, much less to build with. Insurance companies have failed to pay their losses, and the home government has advanced nothing, so that the people are waiting to see what can be done. Electric cars were running in many directions through well-paved streets, and we rode out two miles; all the way were evidences of ruin. Many people were living in tents pitched in their own grounds or elsewhere, fearful to occupy their houses because of subsequent shocks. Brick structures suffered generally, wooden buildings less. The small, inexpensive houses usually were untouched, while an expensive one near was wholly or partially damaged. A few persons were making small repairs. One house would have the front wall of its upper story thrown down, revealing the interior, a bedstead, chairs, etc., with portions of the roof fallen in upon them; another house would have the lower wall gone and the upper story overhanging it; a third its woodwork broken and thrown into inextricable confusion. A marble statue of Queen Victoria was twisted round on its base, as was also that of some noted man; another was unharmed. The large English church was completely ruined, its walls cracked, bulging, broken and partly thrown down, its tower split and the wooden spire on it twisted and leaning. The Congregationalist and Methodist churches were completely demolished, leaving their poor congregations unable to rebuild. The Myrtle Bank Hotel, a large and handsome building, was crushed and rendered

useless. Wharves and storehouses met the same fate as other structures. People said they were going to build up a better Kingston. During the stop our steamer was discharging and receiving freight during the afternoon and all the night and the next forenoon. In the night I was awakened by a great noise and a chorus of song; unable to sleep, I arose and went on deck at three o'clock, where I remained two hours. A large steamer, the *La Platta*, on the opposite side of the pier was coaling; men in a long procession were conveying the coal in baskets on their heads; to relieve the tedium of the work they frequently broke forth into song; at intervals they gathered in a group and then the songs were renewed with tremendous volume; many of the voices were sweet and clear, and most of the songs were of a plaintive character. While this was going on, hundreds of women were carrying on their heads bunches of bananas to our steamer; their movements were quick, agile and easy, and they, too, relieved their toil with song. These operations, under the light of electricity, made a weird picture. Here oranges were bought for six cents a dozen, and at Trinidad for double that sum. A stop was made at Nassau of a few hours, where excellent grape-fruit was obtained. Sponges are found there in great abundance. A few days more brought us again to our homes. Time and space are wanting to tell of the six weeks of uninterrupted pleasant weather; of the bright blue skies; of the marvelous colors and clearness of the waters; of the magnificent sunrises and sunsets; of the many beautiful rainbows; of the great numbers of flying-fish, the light flashing from their silvery sides as they leaped from the waves and sped over them. An old wood cut represents an English ship under full sail and numerous large fish flying high up over the masts and amongst the rigging. Seen from the deck of a vessel the flying-fish appears as a gleam of silver three or four inches long, skimming a foot or two above the surface of the water

for a distance of ten, twenty or fifty feet. They are about eight inches in length, with the gauzy wings of the same length and an inch wide each; of the oases; of the bright orange-colored *Sargossa* weed; of the porpoises leaping gracefully out of the water; of the sharks, with one fin just above the surface; of one whale spouting in the distance; of the entire absence of wild animals, and noxious reptiles, and bird and insect life; of the enlargement of our capacities for knowledge and rational enjoyment, and of the wonderful providence of God in protecting us from all harm and evil.

Did time permit, it would be both instructive and profitable to inquire into the political and moral condition of these islands. There are grave questions connected with this subject which cannot be answered off-hand. Their correct solution demands the careful study of wise men. The proper answer may affect this country. What is to become of them? Some, perhaps many, of the colored people—traders, business men, producers—would welcome a union with the United States. The ruling class would not probably. Do we want them? The discussion is too broad for this occasion, therefore we drop it, only suggesting that, as our neighbors, they need moral help if they do not material.

Following the reading of the paper by Mr. Wheeler, which was listened to with close attention and much interest, a vote of thanks was extended him for his instructive essay.

Mr. Edward F. Coffin was introduced and presented a paper on the imaginary Worcester postage stamp.

HISTORY OF THE WORCESTER POSTAGE STAMP.

BY EDWARD FRANCIS COFFIN.

Although several cities and towns had enjoyed for a number of years the enviable philatelic distinction of

possessing stamps issued by their respective postmasters, antedating the regular government issues, it was not until the year 1887 that Worcester, Massachusetts, was enabled to present claims which seemingly entitled this city to be reckoned among this select class of communities.

In that year Mr. John K. Tiffany, in his "History of the Postage Stamps of the United States of America," announced that while searching old files of newspapers for information about the various postmasters' stamps, he had recently found an item in the *National Ægis*, published at Worcester, Sept. 2, 1846, giving detailed information regarding an issue of local stamps by the Worcester post-office. Mr. Tiffany reprinted the *Ægis* item, and its apparently clear statement of facts seemed to admit of no ground for controversy.

Fifteen years later, in 1902, Mr. John N. Luff, in his comprehensive work, "The Postage Stamps of the United States," relying chiefly upon the information furnished by this contemporary news item, gave the Worcester stamp philatelic recognition among the postmasters' issues, at the same time expressing regret at having been unable to obtain any additional information. The writer is not aware that anything further has been published upon the subject since that date.

The situation had for a long time presented one of the many perplexing but extremely interesting problems of philately. In spite of the apparently authentic statement regarding the issue of these stamps, not a single specimen had been discovered during a period of sixty-one years. How was it to be considered possible for an issue of stamps to have come into use in a populous New England town, at a period when adhesive stamps possessed an element of actual novelty, and to have departed without having left behind even as much as a tradition concerning its existence? The attractiveness of the problem led the writer during the summer of 1907 to attempt its solution.

A short search among the files of the National Ægis in the library of the American Antiquarian Society at Worcester soon disclosed the paragraph, originally found by Mr. Tiffany, and which is here reproduced in facsimile:

state, 1,133, n over \$100. ver 12- is city er 149. 22,600	sea as motion. not the House, owing to a difference in the time of the two clocks, adjourned before the Session had expired by the Senate clock.— <i>Tribune</i> .	are done 1 fis. gr “ suffe WI plaint, be effe for pre De Co n’
ills, Com- l Ma- Locks s, \$6- Coin- affolk ocell	POST OFFICE STAMPS. The postmaster has issued postage stamps of the denominations of five cents and ten cents, for the payment of postage in advance. They are very convenient, and will save the trouble of making change at the Post Office, and will enable people to send pre-paid letters at hours when the Of- fice is closed. To cover the expense of engraving and printing, these stamps are sold at five per cent. advance upon the regular rates of postage.	
	LOCK YOUR DOORS. The Boston Traveller states that on Tuesday afternoon, at house No. 16 Salem street, an elderly lady had occasion to go in to the kitchen for five or ten minutes. When she returned she found that an intruder had entered finding the front door had entered the stairs	

A critical examination of the contents of the page on which this item appeared disclosed the significant fact that the column which contained this paragraph was made up, with this apparent exception, entirely of clippings from newspapers with which the Ægis exchanged. This circumstance at once suggested a possibility that this paragraph might also have been taken from an exchange. It would require only the exercise of a small degree of imagination to attribute its local coloring to a misconception on the part of the editor of the real import of the item, or it could be ascribed simply to failure to credit the paragraph to its original source.

While this seemed a splendid theory to entertain, it appeared to be an equally difficult one to establish. As early as 1829, Christopher Columbus Baldwin, a former editor of the Ægis, had made this significant entry in his now famous diary: “Read many newspapers. Ægis ex-

changes with more than an hundred, so that one has to open more than one hundred different papers each week." Twenty years had doubtless materially increased this number, and even had complete files of all these newspapers been available, the task of searching through their columns for a basis for the *Ægis* item, would present a labor of appalling magnitude.

While casually noting the names of some of the exchanges represented in the *Ægis* columns, attention was directed to an item from the *Providence Journal*. A new line of investigation at once suggested itself. It was a matter of common knowledge to every philatelist that the post-office stamps of the denominations of five cents and ten cents were issued in 1846 by the postmaster of Providence. Associating this circumstance with the *Ægis* paragraph, it seemed barely possible that some relationship might be proven to exist between them. In any event, the value of this theory could be readily enough determined by a careful search of the files of the *Providence Journal*, and by inference the issues just preceding the date on which the item had appeared in the *Ægis*.

At the earliest opportunity afforded the writer, a visit was paid to the office of the *Providence Journal*, where a file of that newspaper for the month of August, 1846, was consulted. Beginning with the issue of August 31st, the columns of each preceding issue were, in turn, critically scanned for some item relating to the issue of the Providence stamps. Seemingly, almost every topic within the province of human affairs had received notice, except the one sought. The futility of further continuance of the search along this line had about been decided upon.

The writer's degree of surprise and satisfaction may the better be imagined than described, upon turning to the editorial page of the issue of Monday morning August 24th, to discover the following notice conspicuously displayed at the head of one of the columns:

POST OFFICE STAMPS.—The Postmaster has issued postage stamps of the denominations of five cents and ten cents, for the payment of postage in advance. They are very convenient and will save the trouble of making change at the Post Office, and will enable people to send prepaid letters at hours when the Office is closed. To cover the expense of engraving and printing, these stamps are sold at five per cent. advance upon the regular rates of postage. They are for sale at the Post Office.

The Great Western which sailed from New York for Liverpool at 3 o'clock P. M. last Tuesday, carried out seventy-three passengers.

THE ERIE RAILROAD.—One hundred miles of the Erie Railroad, have been ordered to be placed under immediate contract.

Horticultural Exhibition.

THE L. recently courts in ceedings bared 33 esurical have conce

It appe Preston, Thompson married a was Minet daughter wife left mother the her their a half old spouse had in blindi pretty effi what he part of s from one sister of Mrs. Thon sician who ness, and tificate or a hall

A comparison of this paragraph with the one already shown to have appeared in the *Ægis* on September 2nd following, tells the whole story at a glance. The exact correspondence of these paragraphs in every detail of phraseology, arrangement, and even of punctuation, cannot be possibly explained as a mere matter of coincidence, and compels the certain conclusion that their origin must have been identical. In other words, it is obvious that the *Ægis* merely reprinted the *Journal's* announcement concerning a recent issue of stamps by the Providence postmaster. The failure of the editor to indicate the source of the item led Mr. Tiffany, forty years later, into the very natural error of supposing that the item was of local significance, and gave rise to the fallacy in his history, of crediting the Worcester post-office with an issue of local stamps.

Why, it may be asked reasonably, did the *Ægis* editor consider this relatively unimportant item, which ex-

clusively concerned the Providence public, as worthy of transcription in the columns of a Worcester newspaper? We venture an answer to this question.

In our opinion, the editor wholly failed to appreciate that the item which he noted in the Providence newspaper had reference only to the post-office in that city. On the other hand it is extremely probable that he conceived the erroneous idea that the paragraph referred rather to an issue of stamps having government authority and intended for general distribution. A notice in reference to such an issue would naturally have proved an item of interest to the *Ægis* readers.

The possibility of explaining the appearance of the item on the theory that it was published with a full conception of its significance, but through inadvertence, the editor neglected to credit it to the *Journal*, if not satisfactorily dismissed on the ground that the item would have possessed practically no interest for Worcester readers, is effectually disproved, we believe, by the fact that the *Ægis* item omits the statement embodied in the announcement originally printed in the *Journal*—that the stamps are for sale at the post-office. Had the *Ægis* paragraph been a mere transcription of a news item from a Providence newspaper, with the original intention of thus crediting it, there would have been no occasion for omitting this statement. On the other hand, its omission shows very clearly, we believe, the viewpoint of the *Ægis* editor, who regarded the Providence announcement as having equal application to the local post-office, where, upon making inquiry, he had ascertained that the issue was not yet on sale.

While this blunder of a rural editor has misled philatelists for some years in respect to the existence of a Worcester stamp, the perpetration of this error has fortunately proved the means of clearing up some philatelic

doubts of many years' standing concerning the Providence stamps.

In some strangely unaccountable manner this announcement in the *Journal* concerning the issue of these stamps had apparently escaped the attention of all investigators of that subject, and its discovery now, definitely fixes for the first time the exact date on which these stamps were issued. It also dismisses doubts entertained by a few philatelists that the Providence stamps were ever actually placed on sale at the post-office.

In conclusion, very little need be said further on the subject of the Worcester stamp. It must be patent to the most casual investigator that such an issue never had anything beyond a fancied existence. Philatelists will relinquish with feelings of genuine regret the long-cherished hopes of possessing, at some time, a Worcester stamp as the crowning jewel among their philatelic treasures. Nevertheless, the writer will always recall this "will-'o-the-wisp" as having been the means of affording much enjoyable recreation, even though it ultimately proved to be a veritable "pot of gold" at the end of a rainbow.

President Maynard called attention to the death of Mr. O. B. Hadwen, for many years a member of this Society.

PROCEEDINGS.

FOUR HUNDRED AND THIRTY-SECOND MEETING,
TUESDAY EVENING, DECEMBER 3, 1907.

MET at the rooms of the Society, it being the annual meeting for the election of officers and such other business as shall properly come before the Society.

President Maynard in the chair. Others present: Messrs. Baldwin, Burleigh, C. A. Chase, Crane, Denny, Davidson, C. S. Bacon, Eaton, Forehand, A. V. Hill, Potter, Nathaniel Paine, W. J. Stone, F. O. Stevens, Williamson, Wolff, D. B. Williams, Wheeler, Mrs. Baldwin, Mrs. Fowler, Mrs. Hildreth, Miss May, James Green, Mrs. Green, Mrs. Chenoweth and Mrs. Stevens.

Notice was read by the Secretary of the proposed meeting of the Bay State League with the Essex Institute, Salem, Mass., Dec. 7, 1907.

The Librarian reported additions during the past month: Eighty bound volumes, two hundred and eleven pamphlets, sixty-two almanacs, two account books, and two diaries kept by Silas Norcross covering the period of 1826 to 1869.

Immediately following the monthly report, the annual report was read, and is as follows:

LIBRARIAN'S REPORT FOR DECEMBER 3, 1907.

During the year ending with this present meeting this Society has received by gifts 452 bound volumes, 1399 pamphlets, 8 bound volumes of newspapers and 1878 miscellaneous papers, programmes, etc., and 108 articles for

the museum. Although it is a fair average increase to library and museum, it is not quite up to the gain of one year ago; it helps to furnish a grand total to the present date of 21,266 bound volumes, 45,000 pamphlets, 274 bound volumes of newspapers, with a very large number of miscellaneous papers, and more than 6300 articles in the museum.

It has caused no little surprise to many persons who have visited our building, as well as those who have read our reports, to learn of the almost unprecedented growth of our collections, both in library-room and museum.

Quite frequently our rooms have been visited by persons not unfamiliar with the growth and development of other kindred institutions, and they have often expressed surprise in contrasting the conditions found here and elsewhere, and have asked the questions, how was it possible for this Society to make such marked progress? How did you accumulate so many valuable publications and relics of the past? You must have had a large amount of money with which to make purchases; and when those individuals are told that *everything*—books, pamphlets, papers, pictures, relics and curios—came into the possession of the Society through voluntary contributions from members and their friends, our visitors are more amazed than before. It might be well to here state some of the possible reasons for this seemingly rapid growth.

Following the close of the struggle for national independence, there sprang up a desire to acquire information, and the people of Worcester were afforded special opportunity for their improvement. For many years following upon the wake of that strife, Worcester was one of the largest, if not *the* largest, book publishing centers to be found within the confines of the American colonies; thus early her people learned the real value of books, and such reading matter as that period in the life of our young republic afforded. In addition to furnishing printed mat-

ter touching upon almost every subject then extant in the colonies, Mr. Isaiah Thomas organized a society in Worcester for the purpose of collecting samples of printed matter, and specimens of such articles of handiwork as would correctly illustrate the customs of the times. All this had its influence in educating and encouraging the people in and about Worcester to preserve and appreciate their books; in fact, all kinds of printed matter, and articles of historic significance. Thus the people had been providing for such an institution as we now have, and a part of their savings has helped to swell our collections. Many visitors at our museum seem greatly pleased to know that there is a place where such articles can be stored and the public can see them. The American Antiquarian Society, formed in the year 1812, in early day had a museum of relics as well as books, and has done much toward cultivating an interest in such matters throughout this community. A few years prior to our coming into possession of this building that Society discontinued the museum feature, at the same time giving the Peabody Museum at Cambridge the privilege of selecting for their use such articles as they thought desirable. After that selection had been made, there were left many articles which were subsequently offered the Worcester Society of Antiquity as soon as a convenient place had been provided for their safe keeping. Thus it was that the private contributions of the early members of this Society were augmented, and the general collection promptly increased. No sooner than the fact was publicly known that this Society was gathering articles of every description, illustrative of the early history, customs and habits of the early settlers, than letters were received offering articles, and people came bringing some choice family keepsake, gladly availing themselves of the opportunity to place them where they could be cared for, and accessible to all who should wish to see them.

To-day we have a museum of relics and a library well

filled with valuable books, pamphlets and papers—a collection that any society ought to be proud of—all of which has been, with the help of friends, accomplished in little more than sixteen years.

The Treasurer, Mr. Frank E. Williamson, then read a report as follows:

THE TREASURER'S ANNUAL REPORT.

In compliance with the By-laws, the Treasurer of the Worcester Society of Antiquity herewith submits his annual report of receipts and expenditures for the year ending Nov. 30, 1907.

The amount of the investments and cash on hand Dec. 1, 1907, was \$11,375.09, divided as follows:

The Albert Curtis fund,	\$2,046 07
The Stephen Salisbury fund,	5,004 70
The Hester Newton Wetherell fund,	4,000 00
The Life Membership fund,	322 68
Cash on hand,	1 64
	<hr/>
	\$11,375 09

DETAILED STATEMENT OF THE RECEIPTS AND EXPENDITURES.

DR.

Cash on hand per last report,	\$127 80
Received for annual dues,	741 00
Received for rent of hall,	76 00
Received from estate Stephen Salisbury (bequest),	5,000 00
Received from estate Stephen Salisbury, interest on bequest,	114 16
Received from R. K. Sheppard, note paid,	3,000 00
Received from R. K. Sheppard, interest,	93 33

Received from interest on bonds,	295 00	
Received from interest on bank deposits,	1 63	
Received from Henry P. Upham, gift for printing,	100 00	
Received for subscriptions for Cape Cod Pilgrim monument,	45 00	
Received, sale of Proceedings,	3 75	
		<hr/>
		\$9,597 67

CR.

By salary, Librarian,	\$600 00
By salary, Secretary,	25 00
By deposit, Mechanics Savings Bank, balance Stephen Salisbury fund,	470 00
By deposit, Worcester County Institu- tion for Savings, balance Hester Newton Wetherell fund,	120 00
For Atlanta, Birmingham & Atlantic R. R., three \$1000 first-mortgage 5% bonds,	2,880 00
For Boston & Northern Street Rail- way, two \$1000 first-mortgage 4% gold bonds,	1,830 00
For Old Colony Street Railway, three \$1000 first-mortgage 4% gold bonds,	2,700 00
For book, G. M. Dodge,	5 00
For city directory,	3 00
For coal,	125 00
For cut, Old South Church,	1 50
For electrotypes,	2 76
For electric light,	17 87
For express and trucking,	9 25
For extra labor about building,	19 72
For frame for map of Worcester, 1833,	3 50

For gas,	4 89
For interest on bonds purchased,	82 22
For interest received from Stephen Salisbury estate to Life Member- ship fund,	114 16
For Indian deeds,	3 50
For insurance,	109 40
For membership fee and dues, Bay State League,	3 00
For postal cards,	8 00
For postage stamps,	49 96
For printing,	158 26
For rent, safe deposit box,	2 00
For repairs, heating apparatus,	33 82
For repairs, building,	96 23
For stationery,	7 46
For inscribed stone for Cape Cod Pil- grim monument,	45 00
For taxes,	21 60
For telephone,	27 63
For tools,	1 30
For tuning piano,	8 00
For water,	4 00
For wood,	3 00
Cash on hand,	1 64
	<hr/>
	\$9,597 67

CONDITION OF THE SEVERAL FUNDS.

ALBERT CURTIS FUND.

Balance on hand, Dec. 1, 1906,	\$2,044 29
Income received to Dec. 1, 1907,	81 78
	<hr/>
	\$2,126 07
Transferred to general account,	80 00
	<hr/>
	\$2,046 07

STEPHEN SALISBURY FUND.

Received from executors,	\$5,000 00	
Income received for six months,	104 70	
	<hr/>	
	\$5,104 70	
Transferred to general account,	100 00	
	<hr/>	
		5,004 70

HESTER NEWTON WETHERELL FUND.

Balance on hand, Dec. 1, 1906,	\$4,000 00	
Income received to Dec. 1, 1907,	208 33	
	<hr/>	
	\$4,208 33	
Transferred to general account,	208 33	
	<hr/>	
		4,000 00

LIFE MEMBERSHIP FUND.

Balance on hand, Dec. 1, 1906,	\$199 34	
By deposit, interest received from		
Stephen Salisbury legacy,	114 16	
Income to Dec. 1, 1907,	9 18	
	<hr/>	
		322 68

STATEMENT OF INVESTMENTS.

3 Atlanta, Birmingham & Atlantic		
R. R. bonds, 5%,	\$2,880 00	
2 Boston & Northern Street Railway,		
4%,	1,830 00	
3 Old Colony Street Railway, 4%,	2,700 00	
3 Northern Pacific R. R. bonds, 4%,	3,000 00	
Deposit, Mechanics Savings Bank,	474 70	
Deposit, People's Savings Bank,	368 75	
Deposit, Worcester County Institu-		
tion for Savings,	120 00	
	<hr/>	
		\$11,373 45



HON. DANIEL H. CHAMBERLAIN

I have examined the securities, audited the accompanying entries for receipts and expenditures with their proper vouchers, and they appear to be correct and complete.

MARCUS L. FOSTER,

Auditor.

JANUARY 2, 1908.

The officers to serve for the ensuing year were then elected:

For President, Mander Alvan Maynard; First Vice-president, Charles E. Burbank; Second Vice-president, Adeline May; Treasurer, Frank E. Williamson; Secretary, Walter Davidson; Librarian, Ellery B. Crane; Standing Committee on Nomination, for three years, Charles C. Baldwin.

To fill vacancy caused by resignation of Mr. Edward F. Coffin on above committee, Mr. Charles H. Burleigh was elected for two years.

James Green, Esq., was then introduced and presented the following:

PERSONAL RECOLLECTIONS OF HON. DANIEL H.
CHAMBERLAIN, EX-GOVERNOR OF SOUTH
CAROLINA.

By JAMES GREEN, Esq.

The scholars and teachers of the Worcester High School of fifty years ago will remember a thin-faced, medium-sized boy with a very sober, earnest look, five or six years older than those of his own class in school, who came at that time from West Brookfield to Worcester to fit for college. He was the son of a farmer prominent in the local life of his town, and one of nine children who were all brought up in the old home at West Brookfield, about a mile from the railway station, upon

a little eminence that commanded a beautiful view of the surrounding country. Across the valley, on the opposite hill, was the old house from which the Foster family came down to Worcester. Of this family, Hon. Dwight Foster—Judge Foster of our Supreme Court—was the one best known to those now living.

All of D. H. Chamberlain's brothers and sisters showed an unusual intelligence and force of character, and he and his brother Leander became prominent on a much larger field.

This very studious boy, who was known in our High School as D. Henry Chamberlain, showed an extraordinary maturity and power of study. He planned to break in upon his studies and go out to teach a while, to raise money to prosecute his education; but he fortunately had two teachers of a rare order, who recognized that they were dealing with an uncommon student, and they urged him not to interrupt his high school education, but to continue in the school as a pupil and fit for college; and they pledged themselves to get him a place to teach in that very school, where he could earn as much as he could get in a country town outside. So for a year or more, Chamberlain was actually teaching in the school while he was reciting in the upper classes. Evenings and vacations he also kept on working, either at his books or at something from which to store up money for his college expenses.

Homer B. Sprague was the head master of our High School at that time, and Phineas Walcott Calkins was his second in rank. These gentlemen were enthusiastic Yale men, and they incited the ardor of many young men in the school to go to Yale College. There was at that time a powerful church influence in Worcester opposed to Harvard College because of its being non-sectarian, and therefore, in the sectarian mind, pernicious; and the present writer was the only Worcester boy that went

out to Harvard during a period of six consecutive years. Previous to the arrival of Messrs. Sprague and Calkins at the school, there had been a religious revival in this community, which had also swept over the school; and at recess or other times in the day, revival meetings were held in the school, and some emotional children were sobbing during the hours when they were supposed to be engaged in secular studies.

In 1856 or 1857, Chamberlain and his staunch friend and companion, Walter Allen, afterwards a distinguished newspaper editor until he died on February 7, 1907, got together a group of boys in the school, and organized a literary society which has continued to the present day, "The Eucleia." They also attended every public assembly where they could listen to Phillips and Garrison, Sumner and Wilson. Only lately, Chamberlain told me that he must have heard Wendell Phillips speak in public over fifty times.

He entered Yale College in the autumn of 1858, and joined at once one of its two great contesting literary societies, "The Linonean." In every prize-debate which he was entitled to enter, he won the first prize. Soon also he became interested with others in organizing an intercollegiate magazine called the "University Quarterly," on which he was one of the editors. His scholarship at Yale was sound and thorough; he was graduated fourth in his class, and at the same time he won the DeForest medal for excellence in oratory, and was elected by his class to be their orator on Class Day. His brother, Leander T. Chamberlain, of the very next class, 1863, is said to be the only one, up to his time, who made a higher college record; for Leander Chamberlain not only won the DeForest prize, but also stood first in his class. Daniel Chamberlain's interest in classical study became so great that he continued afterwards to study Greek and Latin for the rest of his life, and to read the

latest Latin grammars, even, during his last years, for refreshment and pleasure; while to the close of life, Latin quotations fell from his lips as easily as English proverbs. At the same time, he had the reputation of being the ablest politician in college, although he had opposed to him, sometimes, in college politics, a man who carried a name well known then and ever since, who is now at the head of citizenship in Chicago—Franklin MacVeagh.

From Yale College, Chamberlain was graduated in 1862. He brought from New Haven a letter of recommendation from President Woolsey for use in case he tried to get a commission in the army; and in this letter, the great President said that Chamberlain was “a born leader of men.” It should be said that Chamberlain had been intensely interested in national politics even when he was in the High School. He was early an advocate of emancipation. In the days when such advocates were few and were generally held up to obloquy even in Worcester, they were still a powerful faction. Worcester was known throughout the whole country as a town devoted to Abolitionism and all other “isms.” The Free Soil party, it was claimed, was founded here; and our Judge Allen is called the leader who worked up this sentiment, this doctrine of conscience, into a practical political party. So strongly did the new doctrines prevail in Worcester, and so loudly were they spoken here, that when a man was described elsewhere as being intellectually a “Worcester man,” he was understood, without further explanation, to be an advocate of abolition, and perhaps also of woman’s rights. In Yale College, Chamberlain was known and published by his opponents as a “Worcester man;” but in spite of this handicap he is said to have carried the politics of Yale College in whatever way he chose.

On leaving college, Chamberlain came at once to the Harvard Law School, where there was a very strong

representation of Yale men at the time. I remember two "Wooden Spoon" men—Stanford Newel of St. Paul, Minnesota, and George C. S. Southworth of Springfield, Massachusetts. (The "Wooden Spoon" was supposed to be elected to that title at Yale on account of his surpassing good fellowship.) There were also two "Class Orators." Fred. Adams was known by his Yale nickname of "Judge," because of his learning and fairness of mind. He is now a judge of high repute on the New Jersey Court of Appeals. William C. Whitney was afterwards Secretary of the Navy. George Gray and Anthony Higgins, the latter from Yale, were afterwards United States Senators from Delaware. Henry F. Dimock afterwards left the New York bar for a successful business career. Of Harvard men in the Law School, Albert Stickney was long prominent at the New York bar, and was one of Samuel J. Tilden's ablest lieutenants in the war against the Tweed ring. Stickney had pulled in the Harvard four-oar boat with Charles W. Eliot, now the President of Harvard, and with Alexander Agassiz. George B. Young, who has since been a Justice of the Supreme Court of Minnesota and a railroad lawyer of national fame, was then in the school, and so was Edward D. McCarthy, afterwards a prominent admiralty lawyer in New York City. There, too, were Henry James, who became the novelist; John Fiske, the historian, and John E. Hudson, the head of the Bell Telephone system. Charles S. Fairchild of Harvard, 1863, was afterwards Secretary of the Treasury. Chamberlain was in the school for a little over a year. He took part in the discussions of "Parliament," where political questions were debated Friday nights; he belonged to various law clubs; he helped Professor Washburn prepare a new edition of his "Law of Real Property," and worked for Professor Parsons upon more than one of his law books. With all this hard work he found plenty of time for

social life and was one of the best-liked men in the school. I remember his reading "Fearne on Contingent Remainders," after he had studied law about a year, while all the rest of his law work in the school was going on; and when we quizzed him about it, because it represented the "dry-as-dust" of the law, he said he was testing himself in this way to see what progress he had made in the law and how much he really could understand. Ex-Secretary Fairchild has lately said that he remembered Chamberlain as, on the whole, the ablest man of his time in the Harvard Law School.

But Chamberlain had been an Abolitionist, an advocate of emancipation by war, and known in college as a "Worcester man." The war was still going on—at the opening of 1864—and Chamberlain felt that he must take a part in the military service or lose his self-respect; and he got an appointment by Governor Andrew to a lieutenancy in the Fifth Massachusetts Cavalry, a corps of colored men, and left his law-school course unfinished to go off into camp at Readville. This was the regiment which Harry S. Russell, and afterwards Charles Francis Adams, commanded, where Charles P. Bowditch and many other men of note in Boston held commissions. After a while, Chamberlain was adjutant in this regiment, and he stayed in the service to the end of the war. He made no claim to military genius; he simply wanted to do his duty. At the close of the war, a college classmate who had practiced law in Charleston, South Carolina, died there, and Chamberlain was called upon to go to Charleston and settle his affairs. He was also employed as a lawyer to prosecute claims in New Orleans by someone who had been stripped of his property in cotton by Government seizure. He proved himself very successful in this early law practice and was handsomely paid for it. Up to this time he had carried a burden of debt for his education, which had gradually

rolled up from the time when he entered college; for his education was got upon borrowed money.

Chamberlain had talked in the Law School days as if he were likely to practice in Boston; but fortune led him, as I have shown, to Charleston, and as he settled the affairs of his departed friend he got into the harness for himself. His acquaintance and his law business grew fast. Always passionately interested in political questions, he naturally entered the Constitutional Convention for reconstructing South Carolina, and without other preliminary steps in political life, he became Attorney-general of the State, and afterwards was elected Governor. I have heard him described by a distinguished man, who is himself the pride of the Massachusetts Reform Club, as the exception among the "carpet-bag" governors. He certainly had the bitter hostility of the plundering gang that wanted to loot the State. In 1876, it was a question amongst the Democrats of South Carolina, whether they would not nominate him as their reform candidate for Governor upon State issues; but for reasons of national politics, and not at all of State policy, they finally decided that they were compelled to nominate definitely a Democrat and to join in the Democratic national canvass, subordinating State issues to the needs of their national party. Then followed the disputed election, and for a time thereafter, Chamberlain camped in the State House under military guard. We are too near to those troublous times for any one who is not a learned historian to discuss them satisfactorily. Our own Judge Aldrich (Hon. P. Emory Aldrich) afterwards declared that Chamberlain's conduct in those trying times had been as heroic as anything we had had in the war. Of Chamberlain's history at that time, when he was more prominent before the nation than at any other time in his life, there are many who can speak with more knowledge than I, and I will

say no more about it. Walter Allen has already published that chapter of our history under the title of "Governor Chamberlain's Administration in South Carolina," including all the important public documents. Allen did his work so well that his book has been used as a college text-book and has long been out of print. It is he who was best fitted to write the life of Governor Chamberlain. Alas, that he is gone! He "should have died hereafter!"

After Chamberlain's public life in South Carolina had come to its close, he joined a law-firm in New York City, and was often engaged in conspicuous cases in the State courts, and before the Supreme Court at Washington, for over twenty years. His work was untiring. But exciting as a lawyer's life is at the time, there is little to tell about afterwards. Something that I remember of our student days was always very characteristic of this lawyer. We were working together on a moot-court case in the Law School, where he was intent on knowing everything that could be known about the question. When somebody questioned what the judgment was likely to be, and I had said, "What matters it anyway if we have only presented our own side completely and forcibly?" "Yes," said Chamberlain, "that is very good, but I want to win the decision." My impression of Chamberlain, however, has always been that the scholar was full as great as the lawyer. He certainly was peculiarly fond of deep historical questions arising under the United States Constitution.

But Chamberlain had permanently sapped his extraordinary physical health in his anxious public life in South Carolina, and sickness came upon him and temporary disability. He was obliged to travel for a while for his health in Europe. He also accepted easier terms of professional work by taking the office of receiver of the South Carolina Railroad in behalf of the bond-holders,

and in that capacity he made his home for a while in Charleston. He had many devoted friends in South Carolina, not a few of them among those who had been his political opponents. But the strain of his previous life had affected his health so seriously that he was peremptorily told by his physician that he must take life easier. Accordingly, he left the scenes of his business and returned to the home of his boyhood in West Brookfield. He remodeled the house and lived there hospitably for a few years, interesting himself in scientific farming and in local affairs and local history. He became one of the best informed antiquarians of his neighborhood, and was at one time the President of the Quaboag Antiquarian Society, which dealt with the antiquities of the Brookfields and several adjoining towns. From his home in West Brookfield he wrote many pamphlets on constitutional, legal and antiquarian subjects. His mind was never affected by physical decline.

Chamberlain married, during his public life in South Carolina, Miss Alice Ingersoll of Augusta, Maine, who proved to be his most trusted companion and most sympathetic friend until she died in 1887. This loss to him was irreparable and saddened all his later years. In the autumn of 1902, while he was living with his family in West Brookfield, his youngest boy, Waldo Chamberlain, who was only an infant when his mother died, and to whom his father had been a watchful companion up to this time when the boy was sixteen years old, was seized with scarlet fever and relapsed into a complication of illnesses which brought him to an agonizing death. This boy had grown to be the tenderest thought in his father's life, and the strain of his long illness and death broke the father's heart. He was hurried off as a sick man to the warmer climate of South Carolina, where he passed the winter at Columbia; and then, in compliance with his brother Leander's urging, but hopeless for him-

self, he went to Europe in the search for health. In such way he passed the last five years of his life—winters in Egypt and on the Riviera as well as at Columbia and in the university town of Charlottesville, Virginia—always engaged in the vain pursuit of health. All this time his mind continued active. He wrote many pamphlets on legal and political subjects, although his ill health made continuous work impossible. In this period he wrote that "Open Letter to Mr. Bryce," upon the Southern Question, which was received by the public, as well as his old friends, with conflicting sentiments of high praise or indignant opposition. Upon its appearance in the *Charleston News*, began a heated debate in the newspapers, in which Chamberlain took an active part. He did not hesitate to risk the loss of his earliest friends, and the charge of inconsistency, in telling how his views had changed upon long observation of the black man close at hand. "I like to see things with my eyes," he wrote, "and not with my prejudices." Whatever their views upon the letter, his personal friends all deplored its appearance, fearing its ill effect upon the little remainder of his health.

If Chamberlain had lived a cloistered life, he would have been a great scholar. Such was the bent of his mind in youth and in maturity. His memory helped him well, always accumulating knowledge and forgetting nothing. He was one of the sturdiest advocates in our generation of the study of Greek, and his lecture and pamphlet entitled "*Not a College Fetish*," in answer to Hon. Charles Francis Adams's Phi Beta Kappa oration on the same subject, was a fervid and masterly argument for his side of the question. He studied English with great care—in books on rhetoric and in the masterpieces themselves. He heard our modern orators whenever he could. Knowing how he loved the form as well as the substance of thought, I asked him, in these later years,

what authors he had found most valuable in the formation of style; and received this answer:

"Yes, if I had to choose *one* for style, or style and thought combined, I suppose I should say Burke. If he has not influenced me in style, he has in thought, mood of mind, and temper—the great political philosopher, the profound thinker, the splendid rhetorician! I read parts of his works every year and generally oftener.

"You ask whom I would recommend as a standard of style. Of Americans, decidedly Hawthorne; of Englishmen, perhaps John Henry Newman, Cardinal. But for great thought, grandeur, of Americans, Webster; of Englishmen, Burke.

"Bunyan and Defoe are great favorites of mine. They are good models for simplicity and purity of Anglo-Saxon. But, 'if one wants to hear the thunder roll,' as Choate says, 'go to Milton's prose.' For modern, idiomatic, strong and fine prose, read Matthew Arnold; if nothing else, his 'Essays in Criticism;' and if for nothing else, for that beautiful passage in the preface—'Beautiful city, etc.' It is superb in sentiment and rhetoric. But his characteristic quality is *plainness*."

One Sunday in the Cambridge days, George Young came to Chamberlain early and said that Dr. James Walker, the Ex-president of the college, was to preach that day in the chapel. The two friends heard him together; the sermon was that famous one entitled "Prayer," now printed in Dr. Walker's book of sermons. "How did that paragraph run?" said one of them to the other, when they met again that afternoon; and they began to recall it, the one to the other, till they had reproduced exactly this wonderful period:

"I cannot help thinking that many a solemn-sounding litany has been chanted by priestly lips in consecrated places, to waste itself on the air, while the whole ear of heaven was intent on some poor sailor's 'God help me!'

as it went up amid the howlings of the tempest from the parting wreck."

A month before Chamberlain died, in answer to something I wrote him about this circumstance, he wrote me this:

"It is perfectly true. I can repeat the passage at this moment, though I have not seen it in print for thirty years. I still know no more perfect specimen of rhetoric, felicity of figure, and power of impression. I once thought that the last sentence of Irving's Philip of Pokonoket in the Sketch Book was more perfect, but I have long given the palm to Dr. Walker."

Chamberlain himself was a very effective public speaker. It used to be said in his student days that he fashioned his style upon that of Wendell Phillips. Certainly he admired him greatly. There was something in Chamberlain's tones, as he began to speak, that suggested his New England origin; but in a few moments,—as it was when Senator Hoar was speaking,—everything faded out of sight, except the great ideas advocated. Yet, like Mark Antony, he "only spoke right on." But his thought was clear in his well-trained mind; he gave it out strongly; you felt his passion; and you hardly knew that an orator had spoken.

It was hard for Chamberlain to leave this active life. He could not rest. Bodily weakness, nervous prostration, the death of wife and four children—nothing could daunt him or stop the movement of his indefatigable mind. A few weeks before his death, expecting his end at any moment, he wrote a fiery attack upon Jerome for failing to prosecute the life insurance directors in New York for abuse of their trusts. This he wrote as a letter to the New York World, concealing the act from his attendants, "lying in bed," as he wrote to me, "and writing not more than a dozen words without being compelled to stop and rest." But as you read this

burning invective, this stinging call to duty, you would never suspect he was other than a strong man in fullest vigor.

Here is a lawyer of so pungent quality that in a famous political prosecution, the "Star-route" cases, he was the one of the defending counsel especially depended upon to irritate and confuse the attacking lawyers. Here is a soldier who went to war from a sense of duty, and has lately been described in the press as at heart essentially a soldier. Here is a statesman who dominated the reorganization of a commonwealth ruined by war. Who would have thought that this man of iron was the most gentle and lovable of men, most domestic, most devoted to the service of his friends! It was a saying in college that "Chamberlain always stood by his friends." May I quote a friend's letter which informed me of his fatal illness:

"The crisis may not be reached in less than a year. It may come any day. But he is perfectly self-possessed. He is neither distressed nor agitated. Sickness and peril only heighten his usual and characteristic loveliness and nobility. . . . His thoughts are of his friends rather than of himself."

And so it was that when he died, on April 13, 1907, at Charlottesville, Virginia, toward the end of his seventy-second year, and many deplored the loss of the bold, persistent lawyer, persuasive orator, courageous statesman, searcher after truth, there were others who also felt they had lost their most interesting and most faithful friend.

GIFTS TO LIBRARY AND MUSEUM.

Abbot, William F.,	Pamphlets and papers.
Academy of Science, St. Louis.	Transactions as issued.
Albree, John,	Book.
Aldrich, Ernest R.,	Papers.
Alstine, Charles V.,	Articles for Museum.
American Antiquarian Society,	Books, pamphlets, etc.
American Geographical Society,	Publications as issued.
American Historical Association,	Publications as issued.
American Irish Historical Society,	Pamphlets.
American Museum of Natural History,	Bulletins as issued.
Arnold, James N.,	Books.
Bancroft, Abbie L.,	Books and pamphlets.
Barber, Henry D.,	Books, pamphlets, etc.
Baleh, William L.,	Pamphlets.
Bay State Historical League,	Pamphlet.
Blair, Mrs. William,	Blair Genealogy.
Blanchard, F. S. & Co.,	Pamphlets.
Boston, City of,	Records.
Boston Port and Seaman's Aid Society,	Pamphlet.
Bostonian Society,	Pamphlets.
Bowdoin College,	Pamphlets.
Brown, William H.,	Books, pamphlets and papers.
Brown University,	Pamphlets.
Bullard, H. E.,	Articles for Museum.
Burrage, Mrs. J. K.,	Collection of papers.
Bureau of American Ethnology,	Books.
Burk, Mrs. Newton E.,	Articles for Museum.
Burleigh, Charles H.,	Pamphlets.
Cambridge Historical Society,	Pamphlet.
Commonwealth of Massachusetts,	Books.
Candian Institute,	Pamphlets.
Catholic Historical Society,	Pamphlet.
Civil Service Commission,	Book.
Chase, Charles A.,	Books, pamphlets, etc.
Clark, Miss Maria,	Collection for the Museum.
Clark University,	Pamphlets.
Cincinnati Public Library,	Pamphlet.
Coburn Library,	Pamphlets.
Colorado College,	Pamphlets.

Connecticut Historical Society,	Collections as issued.
Crane, Ellery B.,	Pamphlets.
Cutler, U. Waldo,	Books and pamphlets.
Davenport Academy of Science,	Pamphlet.
Dedham Historical Society,	Pamphlets.
Department of Commerce, U. S.,	Reports as issued.
Department Interior, U. S.,	Reports as issued.
Department of State, U. S.,	Reports as issued.
Desper, Henry A.,	Article for Museum.
Devens Statue Commission,	Book.
Dickinson, G. Stuart,	
	Books, pamphlets and articles for Museum.
Dodge, Thomas H.,	Book.
Dorchester Historical Society,	Pamphlets.
Drew Allis Company,	Books.
Duggan, Hon. John T.,	Pamphlet.
Eliot Historical Society (Maine),	Pamphlet.
Essex Institute,	Collections as issued.
Gates, Burton N.,	Pamphlets and papers.
Goodell, Charles H.,	Diaries and account books.
Green, Timothy Ruggles,	Collection for Museum.
Harvard College,	Pamphlets.
Harris, Sophia Roper,	Articles for Museum.
Historical Society of Pennsylvania,	Books and pamphlets.
Holy Cross College,	The "Purple" as issued.
Historical and Philosophical Society of Ohio,	Pamphlet.
Iowa State Historical Society,	Books and pamphlets.
Interstate Commerce Commission,	Reports.
Jack, David Russell,	Pamphlets.
Johns Hopkins University,	Studies as issued.
Kansas State Historical Society,	Transactions.
Keyes, George Harvey,	Articles for Museum.
Lawson, Thomas M.,	Pamphlet.
Lane, Mrs. Gertrude Parker,	Collection for Museum.
Library of Congress,	Books.
Lawton, Mrs. Reed,	Articles for Museum.
Maine Historical Society,	Pamphlets.
Maynard, Mander A.,	Books and pamphlets.
McAleer, George,	Book.
Merrill, Mrs. Charles A.,	Books and pamphlets.
Massachusetts Record Commission,	Books.
Massachusetts Agricultural College,	Pamphlets.

Minnesota Historical Society,	Books and pamphlets.
Morse, Mrs. M. M.,	Book.
Newbury Library,	Pamphlets.
New England Historic Genealogical Society,	Publications.
Navy Department, U. S.,	Book.
New Hampshire Historical Society,	Book.
New Haven Colony Historical Society,	Pamphlet.
New London Historical Society,	Pamphlet.
New Jersey Historical Society,	Books.
New York State Historical Society,	Books and pamphlets.
Ojeda, Lewis Thayer,	Pamphlets.
Old South Church,	Record as issued.
Ontario Historical Society,	Pamphlets.
Oxford Public Library,	Pamphlet.
Pacific Era Publishing Co.,	Pamphlet.
Paine, Nathaniel,	Pamphlets.
Parks Commissions,	Pamphlets.
Patterson, Andrew,	Articles for Museum.
Peabody, Elliott II.,	Pamphlets.
Peabody Museum,	Pamphlets.
Pennsylvania Historical Society,	Books and pamphlets.
Pool, Silas,	An old deed.
Raymond, Major E. T.,	Articles for Museum.
Ramsay, Mrs. J. A. W.,	Book and articles for Museum.
Schenectady County Historical Society,	Pamphlet.
Secretary of State (Massachusetts),	Books.
Salisbury, Stephen, Estate,	Books and pamphlets.
Smithsonian Institution,	Books.
Sprague, Gen. A. B. R.,	Pamphlet.
Superintendent of Immigration,	Book.
Syracuse Library,	Pamphlet.
Wesby, Herbert,	Pamphlets and articles for Museum.
Wheeler, Henry M.,	Pamphlets.
Williamson, F. E.,	Book.
Worcester Board of Trade,	Pamphlets.
Worcester County Law Library,	Pamphlets.
Yale University,	Pamphlets.

ELLERY B. CRANE,
Librarian.

GENERAL INDEX TO VOL. XXIII.

A Trip Through West India Islands and the Northern Coast of South America,	208	Burbank, Caleb, Family Rec- ords,	152
Abbot, William F.,	270	Burk, Mrs. Newton E.,	161
Address of President,	8	Beede, Daniel Q.,	161
Allen, Charles A.,	58	Barnard, W. C.,	161
Almanacs, Early,	90	Burritt, Elihu,	161, 205
Annual Report of Treasurer,	253	Cavanagh, F. W.	58
Annual Report of Librarian,	250	Chamberlain, Ex-Gov. D. H., Memorial to,	257
Arnold, George Edwin, Memo- rial of,	105	Chapin, Arthur B.,	76
Bacon, Charles S.,	27	Clark, Miss Maria,	105
Balcom, William H.,	58	Coffin, Edward F.,	27, 243, 257
Balcom, Nora A.,	58	Committee (Special),	7
Baldwin, Mrs. Charles C.,	175	Committees for 1907,	4
Barber, George D.,	109	Cow-rights,	159
Barrett, Emma S.,	59, 76	Cowee, Edward A.,	58
Barnes, Fred Alden,	26, 208	Crane, E. B.,	27, 76, 110, 131, 153, 162, 179
Bay State League,	250	Cristy, Austin P.,	26
Belisle, Alexander,	8, 59	Cutler, U. Waldo,	8
Bill, Ledyard,	7, 27, 206		
Blanchard, F. S.,	8	Dale Hospital,	10
Boardman, James E.,	76	Darling, Charles F.,	110
Brown, George H.,	58	Davis Hall, History of,	27
Burbank, Charles E.,	257	Davidson, Walter,	179
Burgess, William Mayo, Me- morial of,	104	Dean, O. M.,	26
Burleigh, Charles H.,	58, 178, 181, 257	Denny, Charles A.,	109
Burnside's Expedition to North Carolina,	111	Denny, Daniel E.,	58
Breed, William C.,	76	Davidson, Alonzo B.,	181
Brick, Dr. Francis, Memorial to,	150	Dickinson, G. Stuart,	161, 181
Brooks, George F.,	76	Dodge, Hon. Rufus B.,	109
Brown, William H.,	131	Dodge, Mrs. Eliza Daniels,	162, 170
Buck, William Henry,	131	Dodge, Hon. Thomas H.,	155, 161, 162
Bullock, Chandler,	181	Dodge, Thomas H. and Eli- za D.,	162
Burbank, Abijah,	152	Dog, Commons,	159
		Dorr, Moses, Family Record,	180

Early Libraries,	82, 86	Librarian's Report, 7, 26, 58, 78,	
Ellery House at Gloucester,	156	105, 131, 155, 161, 181, 207,	
Ely, Lyman A.,	206	250	
Ethnology, Bureau of,	153	Librarian's Annual Report,	250
Essex Institute,	250	Longley, Samuel H.,	161
		Luce, Edwin B.,	26
Field-Day Trip to Gloucester,	153		
First Town Library, Boston,	83	Mann, Charles F.,	58
First Universalist Church,	159	Matthews, David A.,	161
Fisher, Herbert C.,	27	Maynard, Mander A., 7, 8, 45, 249	
French Canadians in Develop-		Maynard, George,	105, 178
ment of U. S.,	59	Maynard, George S.,	27
		Meetings, 7, 26, 58, 78, 105, 111,	
Gage, Dr. Thomas H.,	10	131, 155, 161, 181, 207, 250	
Gilbert, Florence D.,	153	Merrill, Mrs. Charles A.,	161
Gloucester, Excursion to,	153	McGrath, John F.,	109
Goodell, John B.,	109	Moriarty, Eugene M.,	109, 161
Government Breakwater, Glou-			
cester,	157	Nash, Samuel Gaylord,	26
Green, James,	257	Newton, Rev. Calvin,	27, 34
Green, Judge William N.,	207	Newton, Mrs. Ella C.,	161
Green, Timothy Ruggles,	207	Newton, Silas,	161
Green, William N., Jr.,	207	Norcross, Silas A.,	207
Gunther, C. Godfrey,	207		
		Officers for 1907,	3
Hadwen, O. B.,	249	Officers for 1908,	257
Harris, Sophia Roper,	58	Olin, Hon. William M.,	153
Healy, James F.,	58		
Heywood, S. R.,	26	Paine, Nathaniel,	8
History of Dale Hospital,	10	Patents, History of,	181
Hawes, Frederick A.,	76	Patent Office, U. S.,	197
Hildreth, Mrs. A. P.,	131, 150	Perry, Nathan, Church, Town	
Holt, L. B.,	76	and County Treasurer,	131
Hoyle, Alonzo F.,	27	Pickup, George William,	109
Hyde, Albert F.,	58	Pilgrim Monument at Cape	
		Cod,	162
Inventions, History of,	181	Postage Stamps and Coins,	181
		Postage Stamp, Worcester,	243
Keayne, Capt. Robert,	82	Putnam, Darius A.,	58
Kelley, Daniel J.,	58	Putnam, Mrs. Alice Edna,	58
Keyes, George H.,	76		
Knowles, Frank P.,	58	Ramsay, Mrs. J. A. W., 58, 76,	
		105	
Lane, Mrs. Gertrude Parker,	105	Raymond, Major E. T.,	26
Leathers, Henry R.,	76	Rice, Franklin P.,	205
		Richardson, Albert F.,	27

Ricker, Fred A.,	58	Treasurer's Report,	253
Roe, Alfred S.,	205, 206	Tyler, James D.,	76
Rugg, O. Willis,	27		
		U. S. Military Hospital,	10
Salisbury, Stephen,	8	Upham, Roger F.,	76
Sawyer, Stephen,	161		
School Libraries, Early,	86	Walker, Cephas N.,	24
Skerrett, Mark N.,	27	Walsh, Joseph H.,	27
Sprague, Gen. A. B. R.,	111	Weld, Joseph, Family Record,	180
Smith, Charles M.,	58	What our New England Fore-	
Smith, Woodbury C.,	206	fathers had to Read,	76
Stearns, Dr. Samuel,	94, 96	Wheeler, Henry M.,	208
Stevens, Frank O.,	27	White, Aaron A.,	76
Stewart, John C.,	153	Willis, Fred L.,	27
Squier, Charles E.,	76	Williamson, Frank E.,	110, 162.
		178, 253	
		Worcester Academy,	45
Taft, Oscar A.,	181	Worcester County Manual	
Thompson, William I.,	109	Labor School,	57
Town Libraries, Early,	87	Worcester Postage Stamp,	
Townsend, Henry E.,	109	History of,	243

Are you a member of
this Society ?

Invite your neighbor to become a mem-
ber and receive the Society's
Publications.

Perpetuate your name by establishing a
fund for the Society, income
only to be used.

See Treasurer's Report
on page 253, this volume

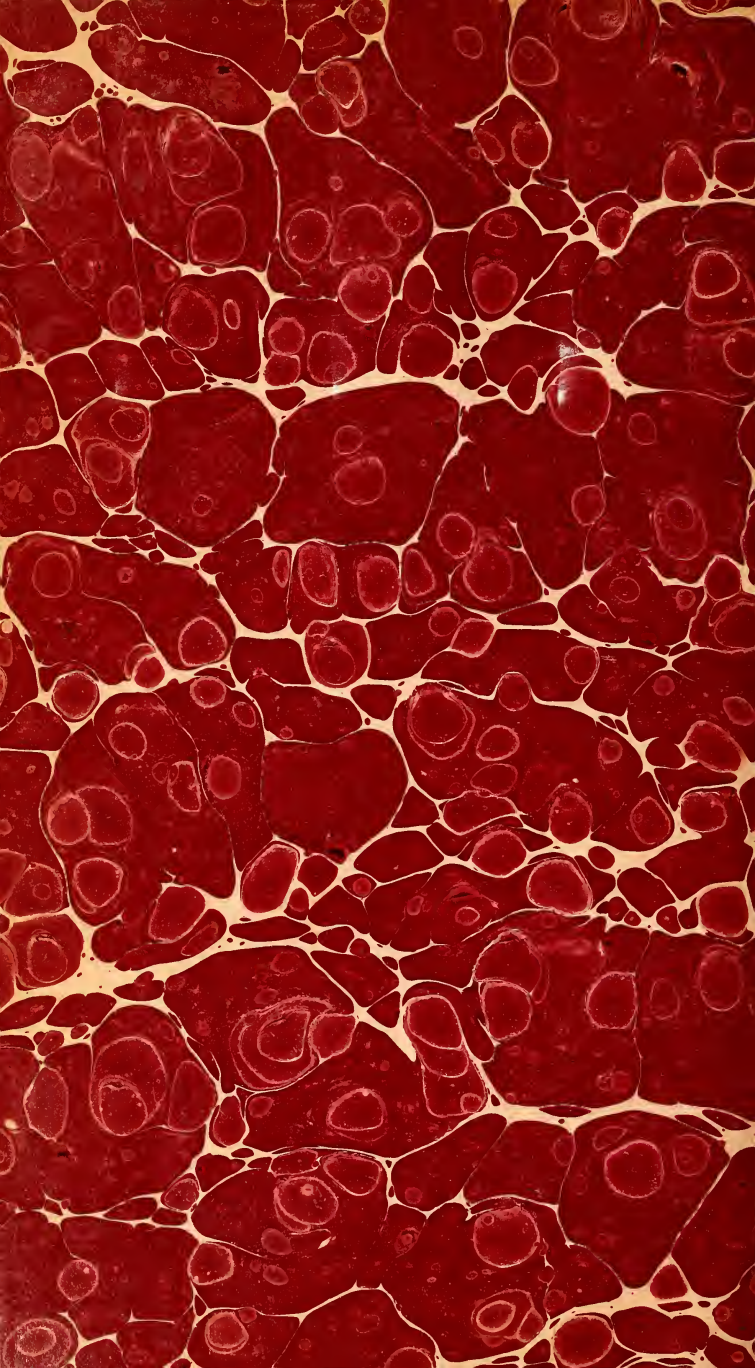
Have you visited our Museum?

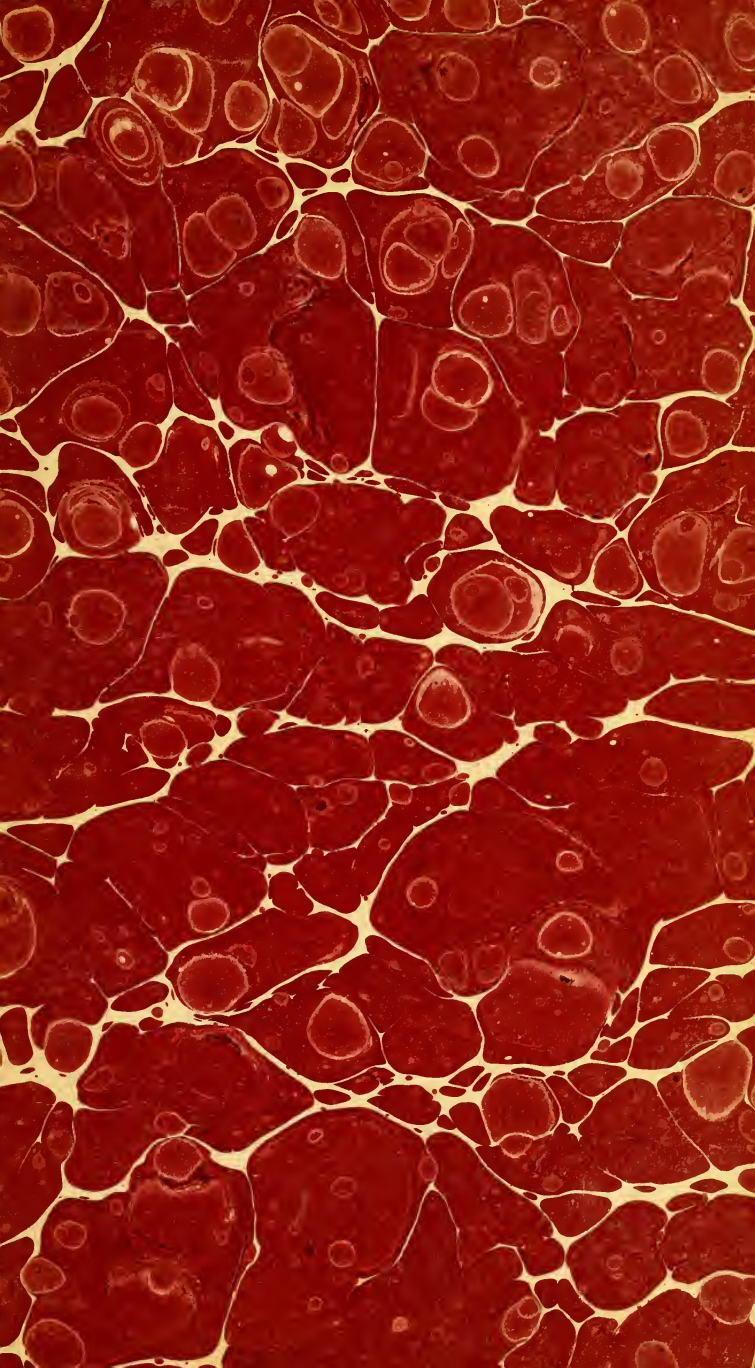
One of the best collections of

Indian

Colonial

and Antique Relics in
New England





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 110 977 7

